Health and Welfare Canada
Santé et Bien-être social Canada

Family Violence Prevention Division

National Clearinghouse on Family Violence

Division de la prévention de la violence familiale

Centre national d'information sur la violence dans la famille

89-03862/

[redacted]

A REVIEW OF A SECOND STAGE SHELTER FOR BATTERED WOMEN AND THEIR CHILDREN*

Prepared by:

L. McDonald, Ph.D.
Assistant Professor
Faculty of Social Welfare
The University of Calgary

W. Chisholm, B.S.W.
Research Assistant

T. Peressini, M.A.
Research Assistant

T. Smillie, B.S.W.
Research Assistant

---

* Funded by National Welfare Grants Directorate, Health and Welfare Canada, under project number 4558-32-2. The opinions expressed are not necessarily those of the Department of Health and Welfare Canada, nor of Discovery House.

Reprinted by the National Clearinghouse on Family Violence,
Social Service Programs Branch, Health and Welfare Canada.

©Minister of Supply and Services Canada 1989
Cat. No. H72-21/9-15-1989E
ISBN 0-662-16664-7

A REVIEW OF A SECOND STAGE SHELTER
FOR BATTERED WOMEN AND THEIR CHILDREN

Submitted to: Discovery House
Calgary Family Support Society
Calgary, Alberta

March 1986

EXECUTIVE SUMMARY

The purpose of this twenty-one month project was to explore the experiences of those involved in providing and receiving services in a second stage shelter for battered women and their children in Alberta. In particular, we examined the women's views of their needs and their day-to-day experiences with programs, staff, other residents and community agencies. At the same time, we explored the experiences of the staff, the volunteers and the the board, and the relationship between the shelter and other community agencies.

Methodology

A qualitative research design was employed and spanned a twenty-one month time frame from February 1984 to October 1985. During the course of the project, seventy-two women were available for participation in the study. Multiple methods of data collection were used as follows:

1. A biographical questionnaire administered to the women at the time of admission (n = 63).
2. A set of semistructured interviews administered to the women at four points in time--at admission to the shelter (n = 67), at mid-way through their stay (n = 34), at the termination of their stay (n = 45), and six months after their stay (n = 30).
3. A set of scales administered to the women (n = 30) at admission, termination, and follow-up, which tapped the degree of battering and the levels of fear, social independence, and internal control the women experienced.

4. A set of semistructured interviews administered once to the staff (n = 27), board members (n = 17), volunteers (n = 13), and community agencies (n = 25).
5. Participant observation was used to study the day-to-day operations of the shelter over the twenty-one months.

Findings

The data, both qualitative and quantitative, strongly indicated that a second stage shelter could facilitate the termination of family violence. Only 20 percent of the women were abused again. As well, the women's fear levels significantly diminished, they had more control over their lives, and they were more socially independent. The process, however, was a struggle every inch of the way.

The findings indicated that women came from emergency shelters (88%), they came out of fear for themselves and their children (46.27%), and they had no alternatives (79%). At admission, the women were in crises, at mid-way they struggled with the decision to leave or return to their batterers, and at termination they were thrown back into crises because of the mechanisms for exit from the shelter. At six-months follow-up, the women were still on the move (three times on average), faced with poverty (50%), repeated abuse for some (20%), and harassment from their batterers for others (42%).

The reports from the board, staff, and volunteers indicated that the board was having problems with their mandate, the staff were experiencing serious management problems and the volunteers were disenfranchised. Community agency reports indicated that they were under

utilized, they desired better communication with the shelter and a clearer definition of admission criteria.

When all the data were assembled, a model of service delivery at the shelter emerged which came close to replicating the conditions of the battering relationship. A model of service delivery based on a sexist philosophy and accompanying organizational structures designed to control and dominate was very expensive to the human resources involved.

Recommendations

The major recommendations call for more second stage housing that is not necessarily locked into the current two-step emergency/second stage approach. Alternative models of housing need to be considered which are sensitive to the realities of the women's lives--the instability and lack of continuity. A multi-stage shelter, a single administration of a first stage and second stage shelter or safe apartments and townhouses with on-going outreach from emergency shelters are possibilities. It is strongly recommended that the length of stay be flexible and that programming allow for individuation and self-determination. Service delivery models, overall, should strive to empower the women in their struggle to end family violence.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The National Welfare Grants Program, Health and Welfare Canada, provided all of the financial support for this project, under the helpful guidance of Mr. J. E. Theriault. The Faculty of Social Welfare, The University of Calgary, is also recognized for the several ways in which it provided indirect assistance.

To the women, staff, volunteers, and board at Discovery House, who candidly recounted their experiences for this research, we extend our heartfelt appreciation and gratitude. Their candor and patience is a tribute to their concern for improving services to battered women and their children.

We would also like to acknowledge those community agencies who took time to talk to us, and especially the staff and women at the two emergency shelters in Calgary, who allowed us to carry out pretests and who provided us with valuable insights.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Page

EXECUTIVE SUMMARY (iii)

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS (vii)

CHAPTER I: INTRODUCTION 1.1

- 1.0 Introduction 1.1
- 1.1 Contents of this Report 1.3
- 1.2 Discovery House 1.4
  - 1.2.1 Physical Description 1.4
  - 1.2.2 Purpose 1.5
  - 1.2.3 Admission 1.6
  - 1.2.4 Funding 1.6
  - 1.2.5 Organizational Structure 1.6
  - 1.2.6 Programs and Services 1.7
  - 1.2.7 Outside Agencies 1.9
  - 1.2.8 Changes 1.9

CHAPTER II: METHODS 2.1

- 2.0 The Research Design 2.1
- 2.1 Sample 2.2
  - 2.1.1 The Residents 2.2
  - 2.1.2 Service Providers 2.5
  - 2.1.3 Collateral Services 2.5
  - 2.1.4 Sub-Samples used in Analysis 2.5
- 2.2 Measurement Instruments 2.8
  - 2.2.1 Semi-Structured Interviews 2.8
  - 2.2.2 Resident Profile 2.9
  - 2.2.3 Scales 2.10
  - 2.2.4 Collateral Agencies 2.13
- 2.3 Data Analysis 2.14
- 2.4 Methodological Problems 2.16
- 2.5 Conclusion 2.17

CHAPTER III: SOCIODEMOGRAPHIC CHARACTERISTICS OF BATTERED WOMEN AND THEIR FAMILIES 3.1

3.0 Introduction 3.1

3.1 Overview of the Socio-demographic Attributes of Battered Women and Their Batterers 3.2

- 3.1.1 Employment Status and Income 3.5
- 3.1.2 Marriage and Family 3.13
- 3.1.3 Summary 3.16

3.2 The Family Histories of the Women and Their Batterers 3.16

- 3.2.1 Childhood Experiences 3.19

3.3 The Battering Relationship: The Women's Most Recent Experiences 3.24

- 3.3.1 Who Abused Them, Type of Abuse and Frequency of Abuse 3.24
- 3.3.2 Feelings About Attacks and What the Women Did 3.31
- 3.3.3 The Nature of the Attack 3.36
- 3.3.4 Who the Women Told 3.48
- 3.3.5 Summary 3.53

3.4 The Women's and Their Batterers' General Condition of Health 3.54

- 3.4.1 Chemical Abuse by Their Batterers 3.54

3.5 The Children and the Battering Relationship 3.62

- 3.5.1 Children and Abuse 3.62
- 3.5.2 Summary 3.65

3.6 An Overview of the Batterers Previous History of Violence 3.66

3.7 Conclusions 3.70

CHAPTER IV: THE WOMEN'S VIEW OF DISCOVERY HOUSE 4.1

4.0 Introduction 4.1

4.1 The Women's Perceptions at the Time of Admission 4.1

- 4.1.1 Why the Women Went to Discovery House 4.1
- 4.1.2 Where the Women Came From 4.6
- 4.1.3 The Screening Interview 4.8
- 4.1.4 Moving Into Discovery House and First Impressions 4.12
- 4.1.5 Summary 4.16

4.2 The Women's Views at Midway 4.16

- 4.2.1 The Average Day 4.18
- 4.2.2 Programs 4.22
- 4.2.3 Contact with Batterers 4.27
- 4.2.4 Outside Agencies 4.28
- 4.2.5 Impressions at Midway 4.30
- 4.2.6 Summary 4.32

4.3 Leaving Discovery House 4.33

- 4.3.1 Programs Revisited 4.33
- 4.3.2 The Decision to Leave 4.36
- 4.3.3 Overall Experience 4.40
- 4.3.4 Plans 4.41
- 4.3.5 Changes the Women Suggested 4.43
- 4.3.6 Summary and Conclusions 4.45

4.4 Six Months Later 4.46

- 4.4.1 Work and School 4.46
- 4.4.2 Outside Agencies 4.50
- 4.4.3 Contact with Batterers 4.50
- 4.4.4 Links with Discovery House 4.53
- 4.4.5 Discovery House in Retrospect 4.53
- 4.4.6 Objective Analysis 4.55
- 4.4.7 Summary 4.56
- 4.4.8 Summary and Conclusions 4.57

CHAPTER V: THE CARE-GIVERS VIEW 5.1

5.0 Introduction 5.1

5.1 The Views of the Board 5.1

5.1.1 Becoming a Board Member 5.1
5.1.2 Perceived Roles of Board Members 5.2
5.1.3 Causes and Solutions to Wife Battering 5.3
5.1.4 Perceptions of Programs 5.4
5.1.5 Administration 5.6
5.1.6 Physical Characteristics of Discovery House 5.7
5.1.7 Perceptions of the Community 5.7
5.1.8 Changes and Challenges 5.8
5.1.9 Benefits of Being a Board Member 5.8
5.1.10 Conclusions 5.10

5.2 The Perceptions of the Staff 5.10

5.2.1 How the Staff Came to Discovery House 5.11
5.2.2 Views on the Solutions and Causes of Wife Battering 5.13
5.2.3 The Staffs' View of Programs 5.14
5.2.4 The Staffs' View of the Physical Setting 5.17
5.2.5 Staffs' Views on Discovery House Relationship to the Community 5.17
5.2.6 Administration 5.19
5.2.7 Benefits 5.23
5.2.8 Challenges for Discovery House 5.23
5.2.9 Conclusions 5.23

5.3 The Views of the Volunteers 5.24

5.3.1 Conclusions 5.28

5.4 The Views of Outside Agencies 5.28

5.4.1 Nature and Type of Contact with Discovery House 5.29
5.4.2 Suggestions for Change 5.32
5.4.3 Summary 5.36

5.5 Summary and Conclusions 5.37

CHAPTER VI: THE DISCOVERY HOUSE MODEL 6.1

6.0 Introduction 6.1

6.1 Shelter Models 6.2

6.1.1 Service Ideology 6.3
6.1.2 Admission Criteria 6.5
6.1.3 Approaches Used 6.7
6.1.4 Resident Participation 6.9
6.1.5 Centralized Decision-Making 6.12

6.2 Coping Strategies 6.14

6.2.1 The Women's Strategies 6.14
6.2.2 The Staff's Strategies 6.17
6.2.3 The Board's Coping Strategies 6.19

6.3 Summary and Conclusions 6.19

CHAPTER VII: CONCLUSIONS AND RECOMMENDATIONS 7.1

7.0 Overview 7.1

7.1 Conclusions 7.2

7.1.1 The Women's View 7.2
7.1.2 Objective Analysis 7.4
7.1.3 The Care Givers Views 7.6
7.1.4 The Discovery House Model 7.8
7.1.5 Findings Relevant to the Research Process 7.9

7.2 Recommendations 7.10

7.2.1 Recommendations for Discovery House 7.10
7.2.2 Recommendations for Second Stage Housing 7.12

REFERENCES R.1

APPENDIX I:

APPENDIX II

APPENDIX III

LIST OF FIGURES

Figure 2.1: Sample Attrition Rate by Study Interval, for the Respondents Semi=Structured Interviews 2.4

Figure 2.2: Instruments Employed by Source of Data and Study Interval 2.7

Figure 3.1: Age of Respondents and Their Spouses 3.3

Figure 3.2: Years of Education, Respondent's and Their Spouses 3.3

Figure 3.3: Highest Level of Education Attained by Respondents and Their Spouses 3.4

Figure 3.4: Respondents Place of Birth 3.4

Figure 3.5: Ethnic Background of Respondents and Their Spouses 3.6

Figure 3.6: Religious Affiliation of Respondents and Their Spouses 3.6

Figure 3.7: Respondent's Current Employment Status 3.7

Figure 3.8: Respondent's Current Occupation (N=9) 3.7

Figure 3.9: Respondent's Spouses Employment Status When Respondent and Spouse Were Together 3.7

Figure 3.10: Spouses Current Occupation 3.9

Figure 3.11: Respondent's Employment History 3.9

Figure 3.12: Respondent's Occupational History 3.10

Figure 3.13: Respondent's Employment Status Prior to the Study Period 3.10

Figure 3.14: Last Year that Respondent was Employed, of the Unemployed Women 3.11

Figure 3.15: Respondent's Average Income per Year, In Previous Occupations 3.11

Figure 3.16: Respondent's Spouses Approximate Take-Home Pay per Year 3.12

Figure 3.17: Respondent's Spouses Source of Income 3.12

Figure 3.18: Respondent's Marital Status Over the Study Interval 3.12

Figure 3.19: Number of Years Respondent Married to Individual Who Battered Them 3.14

Figure 3.20: Percentage of Women Having Pre-Arranged Marriages 3.14

Figure 3.21: Living Distance From Relatives, When Respondent Lived With Spouse 3.14

Figure 3.22: Number of Times Respondents and Their Spouses Moved Since They Were First Married 3.15

Figure 3.23: Whether Respondents and Their Spouses Lived with Their Parents When They Were 16 Years Old 3.15

Figure 3.24: Reasons Why Respondent Did Not Live With Their Parents When They Were 16 Years Old 3.15

Figure 3.25: Marital Status of Respondents and Their Spouses Parents 3.18

Figure 3.26: Severity of Violence Respondents and Their Spouses Observed Between Their Parents When They Were Children 3.18

Figure 3.27: Type of Violence Respondents and Their Spouses Observed Between Their Respective Parents 3.18

Figure 3.28: Frequency of Punishment The Respondents and Their Spouses Received as Children 3.20

Figure 3.29: Severity of Punishment Respondents and Their Spouses Received When They Were Children 3.20

Figure 3.30: Identification of the Individual Who Usually Punished Respondent When They Were Children 3.20

Figure 3.31: Spouses History of Violence When They Were Children 3.21

Figure 3.32: Spouses History of Violence, Whether or Not He Abused Members of His Family 3.21

Figure 3.33: Family Members That the Respondent's Spouse Had Abused 3.21

Figure 3.34: Was Respondent Ever Assaulted By Another Individual 3.23

Figure 3.35: Identification of Other Individuals Who Have Assaulted Respondent in the Past (N=21) 3.23

Figure 3.36: Description of What Happened When Respondent Was Assaulted by Individual Other Than Husband 3.23

Figure 3.37: Individual Who Physically Abused or Battered Respondent 3.25

Figure 3.38: The Type of Abuse the Respondent Experienced 3.25

Figure 3.39: Type of Abuse Received Prior to Coming to Discovery House 3.26

Figure 3.40: Percentage of Women Who Were Sexually Assaulted During Abuse 3.26

Figure 3.41: Frequency of the Occurrence of Sexual Assault 3.26

Figure 3.42: Percentage of Respondents Who Were Pregnant at the Time of Marriage 3.28

Figure 3.43: Percentage of Respondents Who Were Battered While They Were Pregnant 3.28

Figure 3.44: Frequency with which Respondent was Abused, 1984 - 1985 3.28

Figure 3.45: Average Amount of Time Than an Attack Would Last for Respondent 3.29

Figure 3.46: Severity of Attacks Respondent Received 3.29

Figure 3.47: Portion of Body Which Was Most Frequently Attacked 3.30

Figure 3.48: Whether Respondent Hid Injuries or Not 3.30

Figure 3.49: Description of What Respondent did to Hide Their Injuries, 1984-1985 3.30

Figure 3.50: Reasons Why Respondents Hid Their Injuries 3.32

Figure 3.51: Respondent's Feelings about Spouses Violent Behaviour, 1984-1985 3.32

Figure 3.52: Respondent's Response to Spouses Violent Behaviour, 1984-1985 3.33

Figure 3.53: Whether Respondent had ever Left Spouse Before Arriving at Discovery House, 1984-1985 3.33

Figure 3.54: Number of Times Respondent has Previously Left Spouse, 1984-1985 3.33

Figure 3.55: Longest Amount of Time Respondent has stayed Left Spouse prior to living at Discovery House 3.34

Figure 3.56: Time Period in which Respondent left Spouse, in Relation to the Occurrence of Physical Abuse 3.34

Figure 3.57: Amount of Time after an Assault in which Respondent left, 1984-1985 3.34

Figure 3.58: Where Respondent went after Leaving Spouse, prior to living at Discovery House 3.35

Figure 3.59: Reasons for Returning to Spouse after Separation, prior to living at Discovery House 3.35

Figure 3.60: Respondent's Explanation of Why they Think an Attack Occurred 3.37

Figure 3.61: Frequency of Verbal Arguments Preceding Respondents Assault 3.38

Figure 3.62: Reasons for Arguments Between Respondents and Their Spouses 3.38

Figure 3.63: Percentage of Women who Though they had Said or Done Something to Trigger an Assault 3.38

Figure 3.64: Percentage of Respondents who Thought They Deserved the Abuse Received from Spouse 3.39

Figure 3.65: Percentage of Respondent Having Fore-knowledge of When Attack was About to Occur 3.39

Figure 3.66: Reasons Suggested by Respondents for When They Could Tell an Attack was About to Occur 3.39

Figure 3.67: Emotions Respondent Felt Just Before an Attack was About to Occur 3.41

Figure 3.68: Percentage of Respondents who Said That They Did Something About Spouses Behaviour 3.41

Figure 3.69: Description of What Respondent Did About Spouse Behaviour 3.42

Figure 3.70: Percentage Who Defended Themselves once an Attack Began 3.42

Figure 3.71: Description of Respondents Defense of Themselves 3.42

Figure 3.72: Percentage Suggesting That Their Relationship Changed with Spouse, After an Attack 3.43

Figure 3.73: How the Relationship Changed after an Attack 3.43

Figure 3.74: How Respondent Felt About Spouse After an Attack Occurred 3.45

Figure 3.75: How Respondent Felt about Spouse 4 to 6 Weeks After an Attack had Occurred 3.45

Figure 3.76: Frequency and Severity of Violence of the Span of Respondents Relationship with Spouse 3.46

Figure 3.77: Description of What Spouses Used When Battering Respondent 3.46

Figure 3.78: Number of Respondents who have been Threatened or Assaulted with a Weapon during an Attack 3.46

Figure 3.79: Description of the Weapons Respondents were Threatened or Assaulted with during an Attack 3.47

Figure 3.80: Percentage of Respondents who Threatened their Spouses with a Weapon during an Attack 3.47

Figure 3.81: Description of the Weapons Respondent Threatened Spouse with during an Attack 3.47

Figure 3.82: Percentage of Respondents who Told Someone about the Battering 3.49

Figure 3.83: Description of Who Respondent Would Tell about the Battering Situation 3.49

Figure 3.84: Reasons for Telling Someone Else About the Battering 3.49

Figure 3.85: Description of the Advise Respondent Received from the Individuals that they talked to 3.51

Figure 3.86: Description of the Advise Offered to Respondent by the Individuals that they talked to 3.51

Figure 3.87: Description of Other Individuals who were Present During an Attack on the Respondent 3.51

Figure 3.88: Description of What Other Individuals Tried to do when they Observed the Battering 3.52

Figure 3.89: Description of the Professionals Respondent Sought for Help 3.52

Figure 3.90: Description of Help Received From the Professionals Which Were Consulted 3.52

Figure 3.91: Description of Respondents and Their Spouse General Condition of Health 3.55

Figure 3.92: Reasons for Poor Condition of Health, Respondents and Batterers 3.55

Figure 3.93: Description of Actual Medical Condition Requiring Treatment (Respondents Only) 3.56

Figure 3.94: Description of Whether or Not Respondent Thought There was a Connection Between Spouses Use of Alcohol/Drugs and Battering 3.56

Figure 3.95: Respondent's Reasons for Thinking There was a Connection Between Abuse and Their Spouses Substance Abuse 3.56

Figure 3.96: Frequency of Spouses Use of Drugs 3.57

Figure 3.97: Frequency of Alcohol Use by Respondents and Their Spouses 3.57

Figure 3.98: Frequency of Spouse Being Under the Influence of Alcohol During an Attack on Respondent 3.57

Figure 3.99: Frequency of Spouse Being Under the Influence of Drugs During an Attack on Respondent 3.59

Figure 3.100: Number of Children the Respondents Had 3.59

Figure 3.101: Children Currently Living with Respondent by Birth Order 3.59

Figure 3.102: Grouped Ages of Children by Birth Order 3.60

Figure 3.103: Sex of the Children by Birth Order 3.60

Figure 3.104: Percentage of Respondents who Report that Their Children were Present During Battering 3.60

Figure 3.105: Percentage of Respondents Reporting That Their Children Were Hurt (Physically) During Their Own Battering 3.61

Figure 3.106: Severity of the Assault on the Children 3.61

Figure 3.107: Children's Attack in Relation to the Women's Assault 3.61

Figure 3.108: Percentage of Respondents Who Physically Discipline Their Children 3.63

Figure 3.109: Severity of the Physical Discipline That Respondents Have Used on Their Children 3.63

Figure 3.110: Description of the Way in Which Respondents Usually Discipline Their Children 3.63

Figure 3.111: Percentage of Respondents Reporting That They Have Been Struck by One or More of Their Children 3.64

Figure 3.112: Reasons Cited for The Childs Aggression 3.64

Figure 3.113: Description of Spouses Violent Acts Towards Other People 3.64

Figure 3.114: Spouses Violence Towards Other People or Things 3.67

Figure 3.115: Previous Marital Status of Respondents and Their Spouses 3.67

Figure 3.116: How Batterers Previous Marriage Ended 3.67

Figure 3.117: Occurrence of Violence in Spouses Previous Relationships (N=12) 3.68

Figure 3.118: Was Spouse Ever Arrested on any Other Charges, Apart from Assaulting Respondent 3.68

Figure 3.119: Charges that Respondent's Spouses were Arrested on 3.68

Figure 3.120: Description of Whether or Not Spouse was Convicted 3.69

Figure 4.1a: Awareness of Shelter 4.2

Figure 4.1b: Awareness of Shelter - Community Services 4.2

Figure 4.1c: Awareness of Shelter via the Media 4.2

Figure 4.1d: Awareness of Shelter via Informal Networks 4.3

Figure 4.2: Reasons for Going to Discovery House 4.3

Figure 4.3: Alternatives Available to the Women 4.3

Figure 4.4: Type of Living Accommodation the Women Came From 4.7

Figure 4.5a: Description of Who was Most Helpful in Aiding the Women to Gain Admission to Discovery House 4.7

Figure 4.5b: Description of Who was Least Helpful in Aiding the Women to Gain Admission to Discovery House 4.7

Figure 4.6: Feelings at Screening Interview 4.9

Figure 4.7: Average Waiting Period (in days) to Gain Admission to Discovery House 4.9

Figure 4.8: The Women's Thoughts at the Time of Their Acceptance into Discovery House 4.9

Figure 4.9: Concerns the Women Had About Their Children 4.11

Figure 4.10: The Possessions that the Women Left Home With 4.11

Figure 4.11: The Women's Views of the Rent 4.11

Figure 4.12: Differences Between Emergency (ES) and Second Stage Shelters (SSS) 4.13

Figure 4.13: The Women's Views of the Other Women 4.13

Figure 4.14: The Women's View of Their Counsellor 4.13

Figure 4.15: Proportion of Women Who Had Goals at Entrance 4.15

Figure 4.16: Identification of Who Knows Where the Women Are 4.15

Figure 4.17: Type of Contact the Women Have With Their Batterers 4.15

Figure 4.18: The Women's Feelings at One Week 4.17

Figure 4.19: The Women's Average Day at Discovery House 4.17

Figure 4.20: The Women's Relationships With the Other Residents 4.17

Figure 4.21: The Women's Views of the Rules at Discovery House 4.21

Figure 4.22: The Women's Views on the Programs Offered at Discovery House 4.21

Figure 4.23: The Women's Views on Child Care 4.21

Figure 4.24: The Women's Views of the Volunteer Programs Offered at Discovery House 4.26

Figure 4.25a: Description of the Type of Contact the Women have with Their Batterer 4.26

Figure 4.25b: Description of the Batterers Contact With the Children 4.26

Figure 4.26a: The Women's Use of Outside Agencies - Source of Income 4.29

Figure 4.26b: The Women's Use of Outside Agencies - Number of Services Used 4.29

Figure 4.26c: The Women's Use of Outside Agencies - Services Used 4.29

Figure 4.27a: The Women's Feelings About Discovery House at Midway 4.31

Figure 4.27b: The Status of the Women at Midway 4.31

Figure 4.27c: The Women's Plans at Midway 4.31

Figure 4.28: Average Duration of Residence at Discovery House (Mean Stay = 228 days) 4.34

Figure 4.29a: The Women's Views on the Programs Offered at Discovery House 4.34

Figure 4.29b: The Women's Views on Programs in terms of Their Most Preferred Program 4.34

Figure 4.30: Description of the Reasons Why the Women Left Discovery House 4.37

Figure 4.31a: The Women's Overall Experience at Discovery House at Termination 4.37

Figure 4.31b: The Women's View of Their Childrens' Overall Experience at Discovery House at Termination 4.37

Figure 4.31c: The Women's Overall Feelings About Themselves at Termination 4.42

Figure 4.32: Where the Women Went Overall (N=72) 4.42

Figure 4.33: Where the Women Went After Follow-Up (N=30) 4.47

Figure 4.34: Description of the Women's Views of the Programs at Discovery House at Follow-Up 4.42

Figure 4.35: The Employment Status of the Women at Follow-Up 4.48

Figure 4.36a: The Types of Services Used by the Women 4.48

Figure 4.36b: The Number of Services Used by the Women 4.48

Figure 4.37: The Women's Contact with the Batterer at Follow-Up 4.51

Figure 4.38a: The Women's Links with Discovery House at Follow-Up 4.51

Figure 4.38b: Residents Relationships at Follow-Up 4.51

Figure 4.39a: Discovery House in Retrospect - Proportion of Women who Benefitted from the Experience 4.54

Figure 4.39b: Discovery House in Retrospect - Proportion of Women who Thought Their Children Benefitted from the Experience 4.54

Figure 4.39c: Discovery House in Retrospect - The Women's Feelings at Follow-Up 4.54

Figure 5.1: The Role of the Board 5.5

Figure 5.2a: The Boards View of the Quality of the Programs Offered at Discovery House 5.5

Figure 5.2b: The Boards Views in Terms of Whether or Not the Programs Should be Mandatory 5.5

Figure 5.3: The Boards Perceptions of the Community 5.12

Figure 5.4a: The Staff - Hiring Processes 5.12

Figure 5.4b: The Staff's Qualifications 5.12

Figure 5.5a: The Staff's Views in Terms of the Quality of the Programs Offered at Discovery House 5.18

Figure 5.5b: The Staff's Views on Whether or Not the Programs Should be Mandatory 5.18

Figure 5.6: The Staff's Perceptions of the Community 5.18

Figure 5.7a: The Administration of Discovery House - Who Sets Policy 5.20

Figure 5.7b: The Administration of Discovery House - Who Makes the Day-to-Day Decisions 5.20

Figure 5.7c: The Administration of Discovery House - Management Problems 5.20

Figure 5.7d: The Administration of Discovery House - The Types of Problems Noted by the Staff 5.25

Figure 5.8a: How Volunteers Became Involved in Discovery House 5.25

Figure 5.8b: The Volunteers Roles within Discovery House 5.25

Figure 5.9: Collateral Agencies - Amount of Contact with Discovery House 5.30

Figure 5.10a: Collateral Agencies (All Agencies) - The Nature of Their Contact with Discovery House 5.31

Figure 5.10b: Collateral Agencies (Shelters Only) - The Nature of Their Contact with Discovery House 5.31

Figure 5.10c: Collateral Agencies (All Agencies) - Who Initiated Contact 5.31

Figure 5.10d: Collateral Agencies (Shelters Only) - Who Initiated Contact 5.33

Figure 5.11a: Collateral Agencies (All Agencies) - Quality of Contact with Discovery House 5.33

Figure 5.11b: Collateral Agencies (Shelters Only) - Quality of Contact with Discovery House 5.33

Figure 5.12: Collateral Agencies - Suggestions for Improving Discovery House 5.34

CHAPTER I: INTRODUCTION

1.0 Introduction

Second stage housing for battered women and their children is a recent development in the Canadian shelter movement. The first facility of this type was established in 1979 and to date there are four more such facilities scattered across Canada (Craft and Wynn, 1985). The development of second stage housing appears to be a response to the residency time restrictions of emergency shelters. A three-week to one-month stay is frequently insufficient time to address the complex problems that abused women and their children face. Second stage housing is believed to meet this need.

Although there is a request for more of these shelters by social service agencies and community organizations, there has been very little research on the structure and functioning of second stage housing or its impact on the problem of family violence. A review of the literature indicates that there is some discussion of second stage shelters in terms of purpose and need (see Pizzey, 1974; Martin, 1976; Riddington, 1977; Walker, 1979; F. MacLeod, 1979; L. MacLeod, 1979) but only one formal research project carried out on Monroe House in Vancouver (Women's Research Centre, 1980). Craft and Wynn (1985) have since completed an assessment of women from Hestia House in Saint John to ascertain their need for, and the type of second stage housing preferred (Craft and Wynn, 1985).

Turning to an examination of descriptions of the existing five shelters, it is clear that there is variety in policies, structures and programs. The shelters appear to agree that women need time and security but how much time and how much security varies. Living arrangements range from communal-type living to self-contained housing while organizational structure ranges between traditional hierarchial models and collective management. All shelters have some type of programming which lie anywhere on a continuum between professional therapeutic intervention and informal peer support. The more therapeutic directed shelters have certified professional counsellors and well defined programs while the less formalized shelters appear to have minimum counselling services on site and rely more on peer or lay counselling. Presumably, the two types of approaches would imply different utilization of community resources, however, this is not clear from the descriptions of the shelters.[1]

At the time that this project was conceived in 1982, there were only two second stage shelters in Canada - Monroe House and Discovery House. Monroe House had already been evaluated. Recognizing the need for more information as well as a desire to evaluate their program, the board of Discovery House decided to undertake a review of their shelter. Working within the constraints of the time, namely only one research precedent, Discovery House opted for an exploratory, in-depth study of the day-to-day operation of the House from the perspective of those involved in receiving and giving service. Where possible, a conscious effort was made to replicate portions of the Monroe study in a beginning attempt to make comparisons between different forms of second stage housing. The purpose of our project, then, was to answer the following research questions:

---

[1] See Craft and Wynn, 1985 for a current description of the five second-stage shelters in Canada.

1. Under what circumstances do women and their children arrive at Discovery House?
2. What are the needs of the women being admitted to Discovery House?
3. What are the women's experiences while at Discovery House in terms of living arrangements, program participation, their relationship to other residents and their utilization of community services?
4. What happens to these women when they leave Discovery House?
5. What are the experiences of the staff, volunteers and board at Discovery House?
6. What is the nature of the relationship between other community agencies and Discovery House?

The twenty-one month project was conducted from February 1984 to October 1985. Our major interest was to follow the women from the day they were admitted through to the day they left and to follow them for six months after their stay.

1.1 Contents of this Report

Besides stating the specific objectives of this research report, Chapter I presents a description of Discovery House. Chapter II details the methodology utilized and Chapter III provides a profile of the women, their children and the abuser, done by T. Peressini. Chapters IV, V, and VI report the results of the study. Chapter IV considers the women's experiences, Chapter V documents the experiences of the providers of service, and Chapter VI reports on the overall structure and functioning of Discovery House. Finally, Chapter VII contains a discussion and summary of the report, including recommendations.

1.2 Discovery House

Discovery House is a private agency operated by the Calgary Family Support Society and founded by a group of concerned women who opened the shelter August 1, 1980. At this time, Discovery House was an older apartment block with seven furnished self-contained suites. In April 1984, the project moved to a brand new fourteen apartment facility next door.

1.2.1 Physical Description

The new facility houses fourteen self-contained apartments (nine one-bedroom, four two-bedroom, and one three-bedroom unit), a common room, five offices, one office/board room, a child care centre, a staff room, and storage rooms.[2] Each apartment is fully furnished including bedding and dishes, and is linked to the main office through an intercom system. Residents can have their own telephones installed or can use the resident telephone, which has two lines. Coin operated washing facilities are available in the complex.

In terms of security, all windows have been tinted and bullet proofed; there is a six-foot fence surrounding the building, and the ground floor balconies have been enclosed. Spotlights have been installed that are activated when anyone approaches within a specified distance. The major entrance ways are locked at all times. The staff are on site all day, a volunteer sits the house from 6:00 p.m. until 11:00 p.m. and a security staff continues the shift from 11 p.m. until

---

[2] At the time of reporting, one, one-bedroom suite was turned into office space because of shortage of offices for staff.

7:00 a.m. A security person is on site from 3:00 p.m. Saturday until 7:00 a.m. Monday. The police drive by several times during a twenty-four hour period.

Discovery House is located in a neighborhood close to the core of the city and is therefore accessible to bus transportation and required services. The facility is also close to a community recreation centre, churches, schools, and the Y.W.C.A.

Residents pay rent for their suite and put down a $200 damage deposit when they move in (see Appendix I for schedule). Also, residents must sign an agreement with Discovery House to observe all rules at time of admittance (see Appendix I for agreement). One of the rules is that women must stay one month minimal but can stay up to six months.

1.2.2 Purpose

At the beginning of the study, Discovery House was operating on the basis of the following four assumptions:

1. Women living in fear cannot realistically assess their situation. A safe environment is therefore a pre-requisite to sound decision-making.
2. Women within a battering relationship require time to make plans and to put these plans into action.
3. Women who have been in battering situations need to take control of their lives.
4. Women who have been battered must become more socially independent and self-sufficient.

With the move to the new facility, Discovery House has been able to devote more time and resources towards children. A fifth assumption might be added that children from battering situations require support and stability (see Appendix I for the House's own description).

1.2.3 Admission

Admission at the time of the study was contingent on two factors. The woman has to be battered and have children. More recently, being at a high level of risk and commitment to the program seem to be criteria.

1.2.4 Funding

During the time of the study in 1984-85, the agency received 49 percent of its funding from provincial and municipal governments - 23 percent from Alberta Social Services and Community Health and 26 percent from the City of Calgary Family and Community Support Services. Sixteen percent of its total revenue came from apartment rentals and the balance from provincial and federal employment grants and private and corporate donations.

1.2.5 Organizational Structure

Some shelters chose to work collectively (see, for example, the Constance Hamilton Housing Co-op) and others are organized on a hierarchical basis. Discovery House tends to favor the hierarchical structure. There is currently a board of fourteen directors which represents the community. The board appears to set general policies and operates through a committee structure. To date, there is a building committee, personnel committee, finance committee, public relations committee, public education committee, legal committee, program advisory committee, and a grievance committee. Committee membership includes both the staff and board members. The Executive Administrator is next in line and is a non-voting member of the board. The Assistant to the Director is a newly added position which has not as of yet been clarified. Other paid full-time staff include an intake coordinator/counsellor, a counsellor, a child care coordinator, one child care worker, two temporary child care workers, a volunteer coordinator, and one office manager. There is a temporary full-time receptionist. There are two security staff, one for nights and one for the weekends, and one cleaning staff.

Full-time staff work as a team under the leadership of the Executive Administrator in the ongoing development, implementation and evaluation of policies, procedures, programs, and services. Team meetings are held weekly. In-house meetings of staff and residents are held once a month to deal with problems and maintenance issues.

1.2.6 Programs and Services

Based upon experience and current explanations of wife battering (Walker, 1984), the agency believes that women who feel safe, who are in control of their lives, and who are socially independent will ultimately pursue a non-violent life style for themselves and their children. Programs have been specifically developed to support these beliefs. Overall, there are six programs and three services which suggest that Discovery House closely resembles the therapeutic model mentioned earlier.

The core programs include individual counselling, group therapy and education. It is mandatory for the residents to spend one hour per week in individual counselling, two hours per week in group therapy, and two hours per week in various educational programs (parenting, self esteem, budgeting, assertiveness training, etc.).

There is a volunteer program with two components - in-house volunteers and new start volunteers. In-house volunteers (approximately forty active), plan and assist in leisure-type programs for the women and their children. They are also involved in house sitting, driving, moving, and maintenance and repairs. The new start program links a resident and a volunteer (forty active) in the hope that they will form a friendship that will be continued in the community. The new start program also serves as a follow-up of the residents. Volunteers sign a six-month commitment agreement (see Appendix I for brochures on the volunteer programs).

The child care program offers day care services to the women and their children from 9:00 a.m. until 12:00 noon, and from 1:00 p.m. until 4:00 p.m. five days a week excluding Wednesday afternoon (see Appendix I for Child Care Information Package). A play therapy group is run for children five years of age and over and a support group is run for children who are older. These two programs are mandatory.

A weekly support group for ex-residents is run depending upon demand and a group for wives of men who are in a program at a local hospital has been recently instituted.

Services also include a clothing bank and food bank on site.

1.2.7 Outside Agencies

Discovery House has developed formal links through three committees with the two emergency shelters in the city. There is a tri-shelter committee for the Executive Directors, one for the volunteer coordinators and for the child care coordinators. These committees meet once a month. The services of a part-time child psychologist, who serves all three shelters, was also added during this time.

1.2.8 Changes

During the course of the study, Discovery House underwent a number of changes. Most notably, the project moved to a new site which doubled the number of residents from seven to fourteen at any given time. This changeover led to an expansion in program, primarily in the child care area as well as the conversion of a part-time counsellor position into a full-time position. Near the end of the project, an Assistant to the Executive Director position was added. The board changed once and there was considerable staff turnover. Eight people quit (part-time psychologist, volunteer coordinator, child care coordinator, three child care workers, one part-time counsellor, one cleaning/security person) over the course of the study and eight people were fired (two counsellors, one volunteer coordinator, one assistant to the executive director and four cleaning/security persons). In May of 1985, a provincial government audit was carried out on Discovery House. As a result of the audit, a number of changes were instituted such as improvements in security, the development of a personnel manual, and the formalization of policy. This change process continues.

CHAPTER II: METHODS

This chapter contains a description of the research design, the sample, the instrumentation, the data analyses and methodological difficulties.

2.0 The Research Design

The overall research strategy used in this project was dictated by serveral factors. At the time of the study there were no conceptual models available about the purposes and structure of second stage housing. By definition, our design would have to allow for exploration. Secondly, the Discovery House model was not clearly articulated. That is, the goals of the shelter were vague and global which precluded the use of a design measuring goal attainment. Thirdly, the uniqueness of the population and the realities of life in a women's shelter had to be recognized. Battered women live at risk and cannot afford to be placed in any further danger. Experiments or quasi-experimental designs which required a control group were out of the question. Finally, life in a shelter is, at best, chaotic and crisis laden for both the residents and staff (Schechter, 1982). To exacerbate these conditions would be unethical.

Given our research questions and the attributes of the population and setting, the design chosen, then, was consistent with the qualitative research tradition. This approach is exploratory and flexible and is based on the concept that experience is one of the better ways to understand a phenomenon (Lofland and Lofland, 1984). The researcher is able to obtain "...first hand knowledge about the empirical social world in question" (Filstead, 1970:6).

In choosing this type of design we recognized the concomitant problems of investigator bias, selective perception, reactivity and data quantification which all lead to problems with validity and reliability. We attempted to circumvent these difficulties by using multiple methods of collecting data. By concentrating on the point at which a series of independent, indirect and, perhaps, weak indicators converged, we hoped to minimize error and maximize validity.

Five basic methods of data collection were utilized as follows:

1. A biographical questionnaire administered to the women;
2. A set of semistructured interviews administered to the women at the four points in time: (a) at the time of the women's admission to Discovery House; (b) at the midway point of their stay at Discovery House; (c) at the time of their discharge from Discovery House; and (d) six months after leaving the program at Discovery House;
3. A set of scales administered to the women at time of admission, at termination and six months later;
4. A set of semistructured interviews administered to the staff, volunteers, board members and outside service agencies associated with the shelter; and
5. Participant observation by the full-time research assistant in the field and the project director: i.e., detailed records of the day-to-day activities at Discovery House.

2.1 Sample

2.1.1 The Residents

The population studied was battered women and their children from Alberta and other provinces who were admitted to Discovery

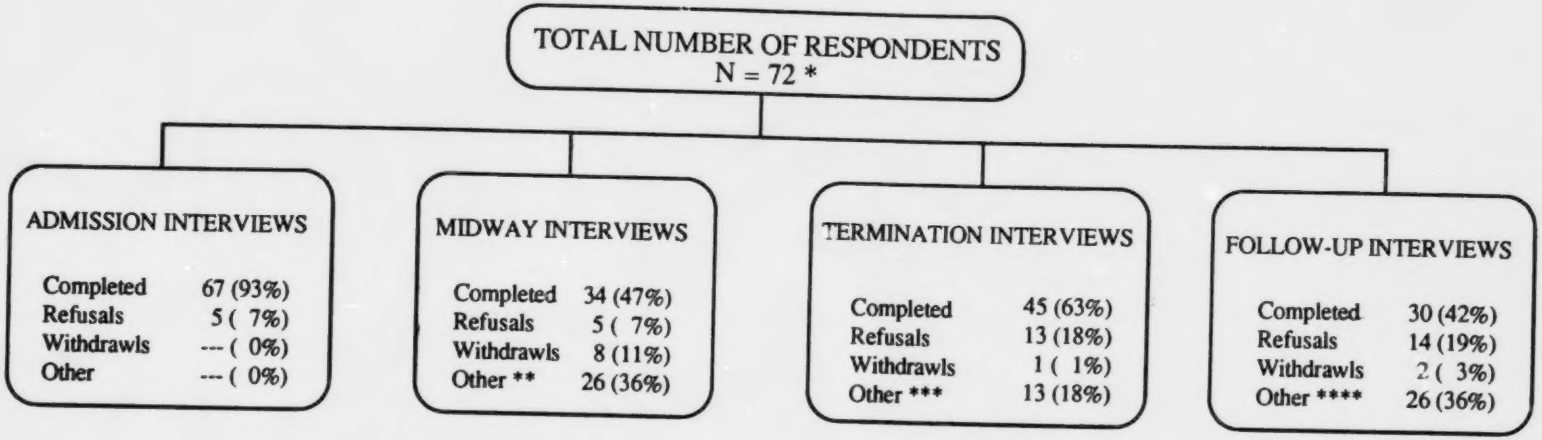
House during the time frame February 1, 1984 until October 31, 1985. Convenience sampling was used such that each woman that moved into the House during that time frame was asked to participate in the study within one week of admittance. If the resident signed a consent form, she was added to the study (see Appendix II for consent form).

During the course of the project, seventy-two women moved into Discovery House. Overall, five women refused to participate in the study because the research represented yet another stress which was not welcomed at the time.

Within the twenty-one month time frame, sixty-seven women completed admission interviews, thirty-four women completed midway interviews, forty-five women did termination interviews and thirty women completed the follow-up interviews. Fifteen women did all four interviews.

Figure 2.1 details the attrition rates for each sample over the four points in time. The major reason for not doing midway interviews was because the women stayed for a short time and only did an admission/termination interview. The attrition rate at termination is a function of the women leaving under less than desirable circumstances. At follow-up, the major reason for attrition was geographical mobility. The women were on the move and they were hiding. Finally, not all the respondents who participated in the time one testing were eligible for times two, three or four because of the time constraints of the study.

FIGURE 2.1: SAMPLE ATTRITION RATE BY STUDY INTERVAL, FOR THE RESPONDENTS SEMI-STRUCTURED INTERVIEWS.


TOTAL NUMBER OF RESPONDENTS
N = 72 *
ADMISSION INTERVIEWS
Completed 67 (93%)
Refusals 5 (7%)
Withdrawls --- (0%)
Other --- (0%)
MIDWAY INTERVIEWS
Completed 34 (47%)
Refusals 5 (7%)
Withdrawls 8 (11%)
Other ** 26 (36%)
TERMINATION INTERVIEWS
Completed 45 (63%)
Refusals 13 (18%)
Withdrawls 1 (1%)
Other *** 13 (18%)
FOLLOW-UP INTERVIEWS
Completed 30 (42%)
Refusals 14 (19%)
Withdrawls 2 (3%)
Other **** 26 (36%)

* Number of refusals are cumulative over time.

** Other Reasons for non-completion of the midway interview include:
[1] Women who completed the termination and follow-up interviews but did not complete the midway interviews. (N=11);
[2] Women who completed the follow-up interview but did not complete the midway and termination interviews (N= 3);
[3] Women who completed the termination interviews but did not complete the midway and follow-up interviews (N=11);
[4] One women died at this point in the study.

*** Other reasons for non-completion of the termination interview include:
[1] Women still at Discovery House at the projects close (N=9);
[2] Women who completed the follow-up but did not complete the termination interview (N=4).

**** Other reasons for non-completion of the follow-up interview include:
[1] Women still at Discovery House at the projects close (N=9);
[2] Women who completed all the previous interviews but did not complete the follow-up interview (N=6);
[3] Women who were unavailable or whom we were unable to locate to complete the 6 months follow-up (N=11).

Sixty-three women completed the profile. Two women out of the sixty-seven simply did not return the instrument and two women had serious language problems even when the profile was translated.

2.1.2 Service Providers

All staff (n=27), board members (n=17) and volunteers (n=13) agreed to the interviews.

2.1.3 Collateral Services

Twenty-five collateral community services identified by Discovery House were interviewed. All that were identified participated. Five interviews were carried out at one emergency shelter and four at the other major shelter (there are only two in Calgary). Management and front line workers were interviewed. There were thirty-five interviews conducted overall. See Appendix II for a breakdown of agencies interviewed.

2.1.4 Sub-Samples used in Analysis

Since there were various types of analyses conducted in this report, different samples were used for different procedures. The differences were primarily based on whether we were interested in cross-sectional or longitudinal data. Furthermore, we had to adapt this approach because of the circumstances of the women. For example, some respondents did not want to do the midway interview but did want to do the termination interview. We felt compelled to respect their wishes. If they wanted to make a statement, we were not about to stop them or if they had dropped out of the study but wanted back in we were not going to prevent this. This freedom of movement contributed to the differences in numbers across the four interviews so we treated each time as a separate sub-sample. At the same time, there were two samples of women who were studied over time - those fifteen women who completed all four of the semi-structured interviews and those thirty women who completed the four scales at three points in time.

Figure 2.2 presents a listing of the instruments used in this study broken down by sources of data and by testing periods.

FIGURE 2.2: INSTRUMENTS EMPLOYED BY SOURCE OF DATA AND STUDY INTERVAL.

A. INSTRUMENTS ADMINISTERED TO RESIDENTS

INSTRUMENT	STUDY INTERVAL			
	ADMISSION	MIDWAY	TERMINATION	FOLLOW-UP
Biographical/Socio-demographic Profile	X			
Semi-Structured Interview	X	X	X	X
Social Independence Scale	X		X	X
Fear Scale	X		X	X
Rotter's I-E Locus of Control Scale	X		X	X
Conflict Tactics Scale	X		X	X

B. OTHER INSTRUMENTS ADMINISTERED

SOURCE OF DATA	INSTRUMENT	STUDY INTERVAL(months)			
		0 - 5	6 - 10	11 - 15	16-20
Service Providers*	Semi-Structured Interview		X	X	X
Collateral Organizations	Administered Questionnaire			X	X

* INCLUDES: Board, Staff and Volunteers.

All the instruments were pre-tested prior to the study. The resident's interview schedules, the four scales and the resident profile were pre-tested on fifteen women, residing at the two women's emergency shelters in the city and were modified accordingly. The interview schedule for service providers was pre-tested on five staff from the two emergency shelters and the collateral agency questionnaires were pre-tested on two agencies that had minimal contact with Discovery House (see Appendix II for the instruments).

2.2 Measurement Instruments

2.2.1 Semi-Structured Interviews

a) Resident Interview Schedules

Given our research questions, we tried to develop four interview guides that were small in scale, that were flexible, and concentrated on the women's experiences. We wanted the women's own descriptions of how they came to Discovery House, how they made the decision to move in, what happened to them while they were there, how they left, and the adjustments they had to make when they returned to the community.

At the same time, several themes were pursued that seemed to be relevant to second stage housing. There is considerable informal debate about the length of time a women should be permitted to stay at a shelter. There are varying views about architectural design of second stage shelters (communal versus private dwellings) and there is considerable discussion around program design (U.S. Department of Health and Human Services, 1980:106). Our interview guides attempted to explore these issues from the perspective of the women.

All interviews were tape-recorded (with consent) and took from one to two hours to complete (see Appendix II for schedules).

b) Service Provider Interview Schedules

The interview schedules developed for staff, volunteers, and board members focussed on the respondent's views on battering, their views of resident needs, the perceived goals of Discovery House and their achievement, their view of the functioning of the House, a description of the role they play, and their expectations for the future of the House. Again, we were intent on exploring their perceptions of Discovery House in their own words. Some of the underlying issues we wished to explore were their level of knowledge about battering, the degree of consensus around goals, their awareness of the day-to-day activities of the House and their views about resident needs, programs, architecture and time frames. This information was to be compared with those views of the residents. All interviews were tape-recorded (with consent) and took from one half hour to one hour to complete (see Appendix II for schedules).

2.2.2 Resident Profile

A modified survey questionnaire originally developed by Pagelow (1981) was used to trace the history of battery for each woman and to collect basic socio-demographic data. The purpose of the instrument was to collect information which would provide a composite picture of the users of the shelter. The profile of the women and their batterers had five sections. The first section provided demographic information about the women such as age, education, marital status, occupation, income, ethnic origin, health, religion, and family background. The second stage looked at similar variables pertaining to the person who battered them. The third section tapped the amount and degree of battering while the fourth section elicited the woman's feelings about being battered. The final section was devoted to basic information about the women's children - number, age, sex, whether they had been abused or had witnessed abuse.

At the time of the study, the instrument was to be given to the resident by the intake counsellor sometime after the resident moved in and she was to complete it at her leisure. The data collected was supposed to become part of the formal reporting system of the agency. With the numerous changes in staff and the move to the new location, this never occurred so we gave the instrument to the women ourselves. They completed this instrument on their own time, returning it to us within two to five days (see Appendix II for questionnaire).

2.2.3 Scales

The following four scales were administered to the residents at time of admission, at termination and at the six-month follow-up (see Appendix II for scales).

a) The Conflict Tactics Scales

The Conflict Tactics Scales (Form N) developed by M. Straus were used as an objective measure of the degree of battering the women experienced. The scales were designed to measure the use of reasoning, verbal aggression and violence as a means to resolve conflict within the family. We chose these scales because of the broadness of the definition of battering that Discovery House uses - physical as well as psychological battering. The Conflict Tactics Scales attempt to tap psychological abuse through the reasoning and verbal aggression dimensions and physical violence (Straus, 1979:75).

The Conflict Tactics Scales were developed through the use of a model analogous to a three by eight factorial design (Straus, 1964:350-351). The Conflict Tactics Scales consist of a list of actions which a family member might take in a conflict with another member. The items start with those low in coerciveness and become gradually more coercive towards the end of the list. The response categories ask for the number of times each action occurred during the past year, ranging from "never" to "more than twenty times." Form N was used because it was developed for use in fact-to-face interviews and there is a greater focus on verbal aggression and violence modalities.

The Conflict Tactics Scales have moderate to high reliabilities and there is evidence of concurrent and construct validity (see Straus, 1979).

b) Rotter's Internal-External Locus of Control Scale

Rotter's (1966) Internal-External scale of locus of control was used to assess if the women were taking control of their situation. On the basis of clinical experience, Discovery House believed that women who are battered are usually controlled by the batterer

(Walker, 1984:78) and that programs should assist the women in becoming more internally controlled. The use of the scale is well-documented (see Robinson and Shaver, 1973).

Internal-External locus of control refers to the extent to which persons perceive contingency relationships between their actions and their outcomes. People who believe they have some control over their destinies are called "internals," that is, they believe that at least some control resides within themselves while externals believe that their outcomes are determined by agents outside themselves.

The scale consists of twenty-three question pairs, using a force-choice format, plus six filler questions. Internal statements are paired with external statements. Scores range from zero (most internal) to twenty-three (most external).

There are methodological problems with the scale in that it is not as "pure" as it was believed to be. Factor analyses generated more than one factor, but the additional factors accounted for little variance and involved no more than two or three items each. Reliability ranges from moderate to high (see Appendix III for technical descriptions of the scale).

c) The Fear Scale

Discovery House believes that women who live in fear are under too much stress to formulate long-range plans. Indeed, the House has built an elaborate security system and instituted a number of security procedures. We were interested to know how fearful they were and whether this changed over time. Because there was no scale in the literature to tap the kind of fears battered women experience (fear of answering the telephone, going out alone, etc.) we were forced to develop our own.

The process involved asking the women directly what they were afraid of. Originally, we had a pool of twenty-seven items. These items were turned into Likert-type scales and administered to battered women (the fifteen women in the pre-test) and five known battered women living in the community. The instrument was further refined using factor analysis. Because this was a new scale, part of our goal was simply to refine the instrument in the study. Appendix III provides the technical details of the refinement of the scale.

d) Scale of Social Independence

Discovery House assumes that women who are battered are dependent on their batterer and therefore they must become more socially independent. Again there was no such scale available, so we developed our own, following the procedures in Section C above. We were interested to know if the women were developing their own friends, managing their own income, if they belonged to community organizations and the like. We note that this instrument began as an index and was changed to a scale in the final data analysis. Appendix III provides the technical details about these scales.

2.2.4 Collateral Agencies

A very simple survey questionnaire adapted from the Monroe House Review (Women's Research Centre, 1980) was used to explore the relationships between these organizations and Discovery House. The instrument attempted to ascertain the nature and amount of contact with Discovery House, the kinds of services that could be available to Discovery House, and suggestions for improving the services provided by Discovery House.

Originally this survey was mailed and the response was ten percent. Because of the low response rate, face-to-face interviews were carried out with each agency. The directors of agencies were interviewed or those people directly involved with Discovery House as identified by the directors. In the case of the agencies where there was continuous contact (i.e., the two emergency shelters in the city), line staff were also interviewed (counsellors and coordinators). These interviews took approximately one half hour.

2.3 Data Analysis

a) Semi-Structured Interview Schedules

The content of all of the semi-structured interviews were transcribed. Each set of the semi-structured interview schedules (admission, midway, termination and follow-up for the women; the set for the staff, board, volunteers and collateral agencies) were analyzed and categorized. Three independent coders randomly coded the same ten interviews from each of the sets of interviews to determine the categories. The results of this procedure appear in Chapters IV and V.

b) The Women's Profile

The results from the profile of the women were analyzed using SPSS. For the purposes of this report, basic descriptive statistics were compiled and appear in Chapter III.

c) The Four Scales

Analysis of the scores from the scales involved tests for validity (factor analysis PA1) and reliability (Alpha coefficient of reliability, Cronbach, 1970:160) across time. Appendix III reports the technical aspects of the procedures used and the results. T-tests were conducted to ascertain if there were significant differences between time one and time two, time one and time three, and time two and three for the thirty women who completed all four scales at the three time points. These results appear in Chapter IV.

d) Participant Observation

Participant observation by the full-time research assistant in the role of observer-as-participant (Gold, 1969; Schwartz and Jacobs, 1979; Spradley, 1980; Lofland and Lofland, 1984) was utilized to tap the day-to-day functioning of the shelter. The principle investigator was also involved in participant observation through supervising social work students placed in the House. Four hundred and twenty days of field notes were accumulated which covered the regular hours of the agency and a sampling of night shifts, weekends and special events (parties, the opening of the facility, etc.). The field researcher attended board meetings, staff meetings in-house meetings, volunteer meetings and the like.

Because we were interested in how the distinctive features of Discovery House (i.e., therapeutic orientation and hierarchical organization, separate dwellings), we focused on such factors as the therapeutic processing of the resident, the influence of bureaucratic structures on decision making, communication, and crisis management;

management strategies both internally and externally and the effects of apartment living.

2.4 Methodological Problems

The methodological problems encountered are listed as follows:

a) As in most field studies, the field researcher was treated with considerable suspicion early on in the project. The solution was simply to be as helpful and supportive as possible and this problem disappeared within the first two months. Because the field investigator was in fact a social worker, she had to be very careful not to be viewed as one of the counsellors and was very clear to the staff and the women that her role at the shelter was one of researcher.

b) A problem that came to our attention immediately was a problem with language. Several women did not speak English and so the interviewer had to use interpreters to do several interviews. The agency maintains a roster of interpreters and allowed us to use this list.

c) A very serious problem that was difficult to solve was the problem of follow-up. Occasionally women are asked to leave the shelter on very short notice, e.g., one hour, as a result of some violation of shelter rules or some negative behavior on their part. This usually occurs at night or on weekends. The only way we could maintain our relationship with these women was to talk to them when they returned to pick up the remainder of their belongings. In other instances, the women appeared to be moving around a lot when they left and although they were called once a month after leaving and were given self-addressed stamped postcards when they left, the least of their worries was to stay in touch with the shelter.

d) Another potential methodological problem was the change of position of our field researcher on October 1, 1984, who became the full-time social worker at the shelter. This actually turned out to be an advantage in several ways. The new researcher was trained on site by the original researcher for three weeks prior to the change over and the original researcher continued to be far more supportive of the research since she understood the protocol. The other benefit we received was confirmation of observations by a second observer.

e) During the summer of 1984, six summer students were hired on grant money. One of the students was instructed to do a research project, namely collect data on the women. The student was not entirely clear on what was to be done and pursued some of the same information that our project was collecting (via telephone). The women mixed up the projects and as a result felt they had done the follow-up interview and were not prepared to do another one.

f) Although our field notes were locked up every night, there was clear indication that someone had gone through them early on in the project. All documentation was henceforth kept at another site.

2.5 Conclusion

As is the case with qualitative data (Lofland and Lofland, 1984), there is enormous amounts of data to be analyzed and the researcher is usually forced to pick and choose what will be included. Our decision in this matter was subject to two factors. Because some of the samples were small, we knew if we included some information, the respondents would be easily identified. We tried to avoid this at all costs. Secondly, we wanted this report to provide information to be used by Discovery House specifically, and for those involved in second stage shelters generally. We therefore favored more practical information.

CHAPTER III: SOCIODEMOGRAPHIC CHARACTERISTICS OF BATTERED WOMEN AND THEIR FAMILIES

3.0 Introduction

The following chapter consists of the results acquired through the use of a twenty-three page questionnaire designed to obtain detailed information concerning each respondent's background and demographic characteristics. The detailed questionnaire also contains information pertaining to the women's experiences, both current and past, within and outside the battering relationship. Included in this data is a description of: the women's history of intra-family abuse, history of both current and past battering relationships, and detailed sociodemographic data concerning both the women's and their batterer's personal and family backgrounds.

Throughout this chapter the term "battering relationship" is used to refer to any relationship in which physical, mental, verbal and sexual abuse has or is currently occurring. In addition, the term "batterer" will be used to refer to the individual with whom the women were living, either married or common-law, prior to residing at Discovery House.[1]

The following chapter, therefore, consists of six parts: (1) Overview of the sociodemographic characteristics of the women and their batterers; (2) Overview of the women's and their batterer's family histories; (3) A detailed analysis of the women's most recent battering experiences; (4) The women's and their batterer's health; (5) A description of the children's experience within the battering relationship; and finally (6) A brief overview of the batterers history of violence. We make no attempt at sophisticated data analyses since our goal here is to provide a description of the women's circumstances as a backdrop to their own reported experiences.

---

[1] In addition, the term "spouse" has been interchangeably employed throughout the tabular presentation of the results of the analysis conducted here.

3.1 Overview of the Socio-demographic Attributes of Battered Women and Their Batterers

Figure 3.1 presents a comparison of the women's and their batterer's age during the study. The average age of the women who participated in the study was 29.43 with the youngest being nineteen and the oldest being forty-seven years of age. Their batterers tended, on average, to be 4.3 years older than the women. The average age for the batterers was 33.73 with a range of twenty-one to fifty-three.

On average, the women had a slightly higher education (mean = 11 years) than their batterers (mean = 10 years) (See Figure 3.2). In general, 46 percent of the women had completed high school and had obtained some post-secondary training. Conversly, 29 percent of their batterers had completed the equivalent level of schooling (see Figure 3.3).

Approximately 32 percent of our sample consisted of women who were born in Alberta (Figure 3.4). Forty-seven percent of the sample consisted of women who had been born in provinces other than Alberta; Nova Scotia (3.17%), New Brunswick (3.17%), Quebec (1.59%), Ontario (11.11%), Manitoba (3.17%) Saskatchewan (12.7%), and B.C. (4.76%). Women born outside of Canada constituted approximately 21 percent of the sample.

Figure 3.1: Age of Respondent's and Their Spouses.

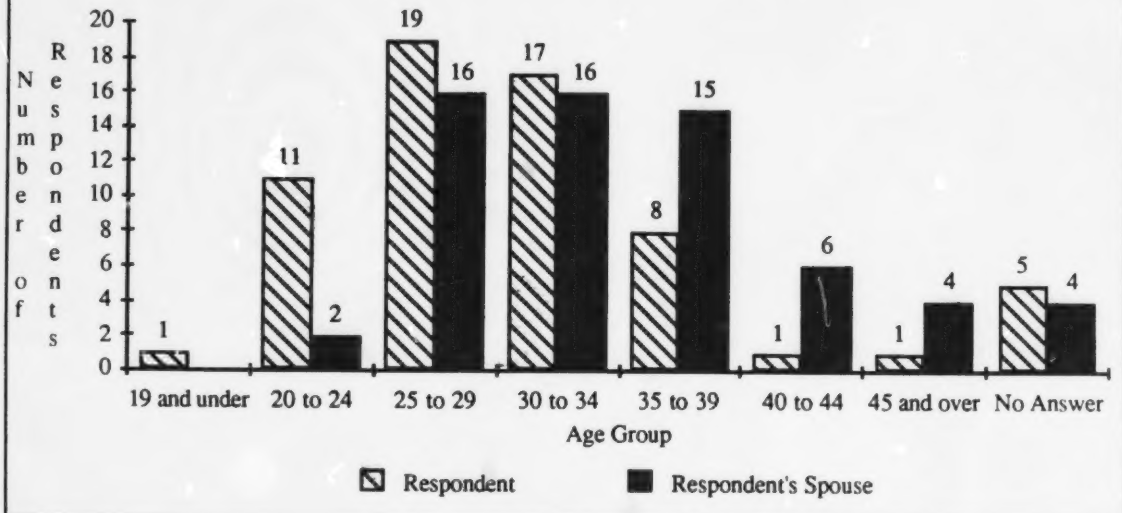


Figure 3.2: Years of Education, Respondent'sand Their Spouses.
(Mean= 11 yrs for Respondent and 10 yrs for Batterer)

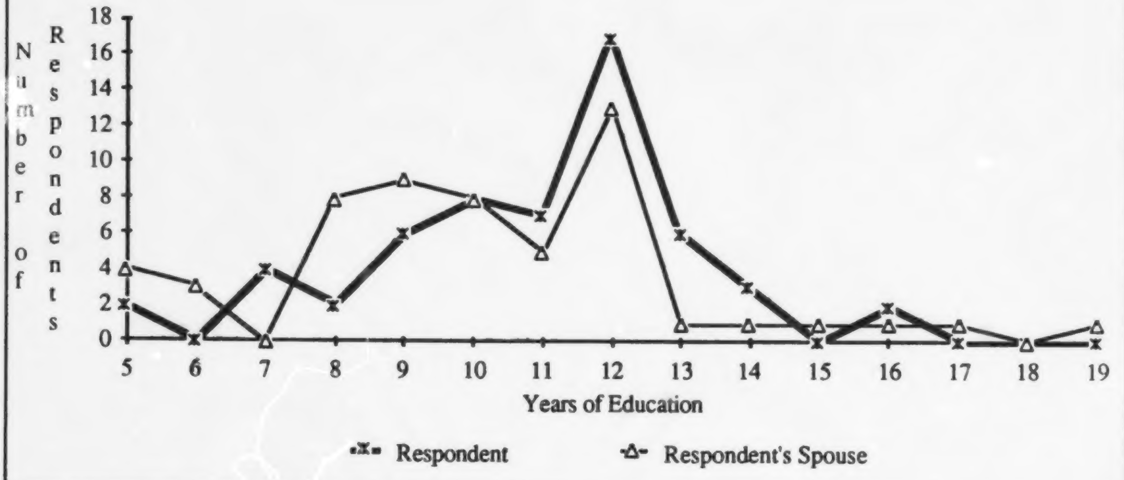


Figure 3.3: Highest Level of Education Attained by Respondent's and Their Spouses.

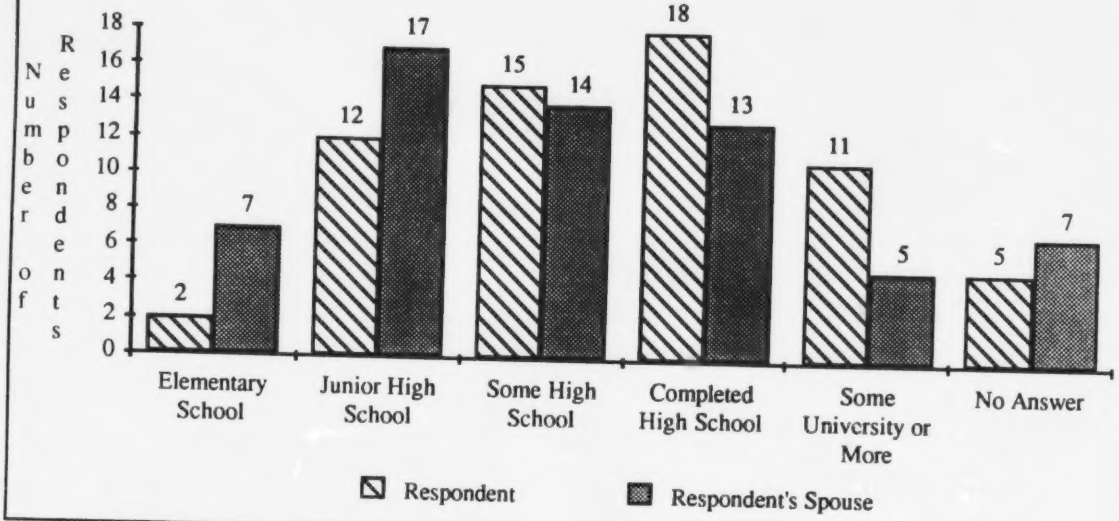


Figure 3.4: Respondent's Place of Birth.

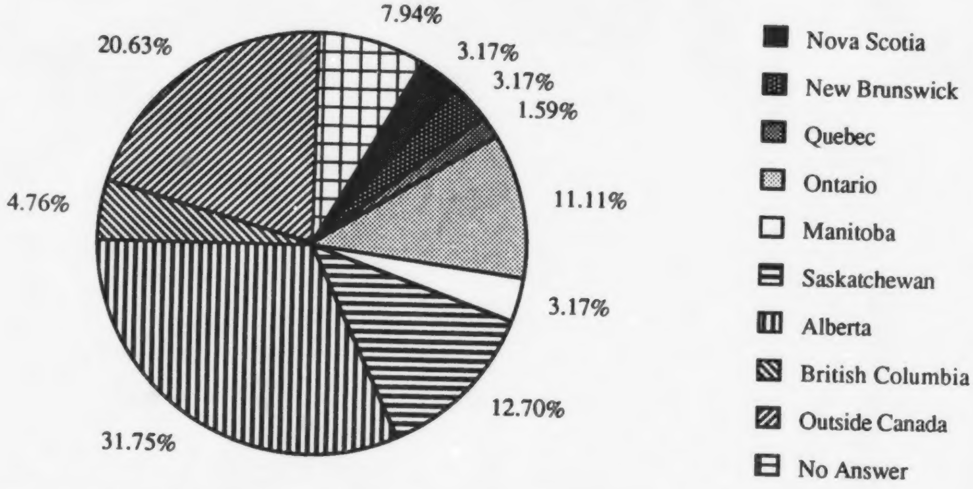


Figure 3.5 displays the ethnic background of women (and their batterers) who answered this question. While there is a wide range of ethnic groups represented, when collapsed into broad categories, it can be seen that of the women, 14.29 percent were Canadian, 9.52 percent British, 9.52 percent Western European, and 6.34 percent were of Native Indian paternal ancestry. In reference to their batterers: 6.57 percent were Canadian, 12.70 percent British, 19.05 percent Western European, 1.58 percent Eastern European, and 9.52 percent were of Native Indian paternal ancestry.

Approximately 27 percent of the women who participated in this survey reported that they were Roman Catholic and that 32 percent of the batterers also had the same religious affiliation (Figure 3.6). The remainder of sample consisted of women who were: Anglican (7.94%; batterer 1.58%), United Church (14.29%; batterer 7.94%), Presbyterian (3.17%; batterer, 1.58%), Lutheran (6.34%; batterer 3.17%), or some other protestant religion (20.64%; batterer 20.64%).

3.1.1 Employment Status and Income

While 76 percent of the women who participated in this study were unemployed (Figure 3.7), it is noted that of those who were employed, 22 percent were employed in professional/managerial occupations, 33 percent in secretarial/clerical occupations, 11 percent in sales and 33 percent in service type occupations (Figure 3.8). In comparison, 78 percent (Figure 3.9) of their batterers were employed. The breakdown for the men was 12.70% in professional/semi-professional, 7.94% skilled and semi-skilled white collar, 23.81% skilled crafts and trades, 17.46% semi-skilled manual labor, 9.52% unskilled

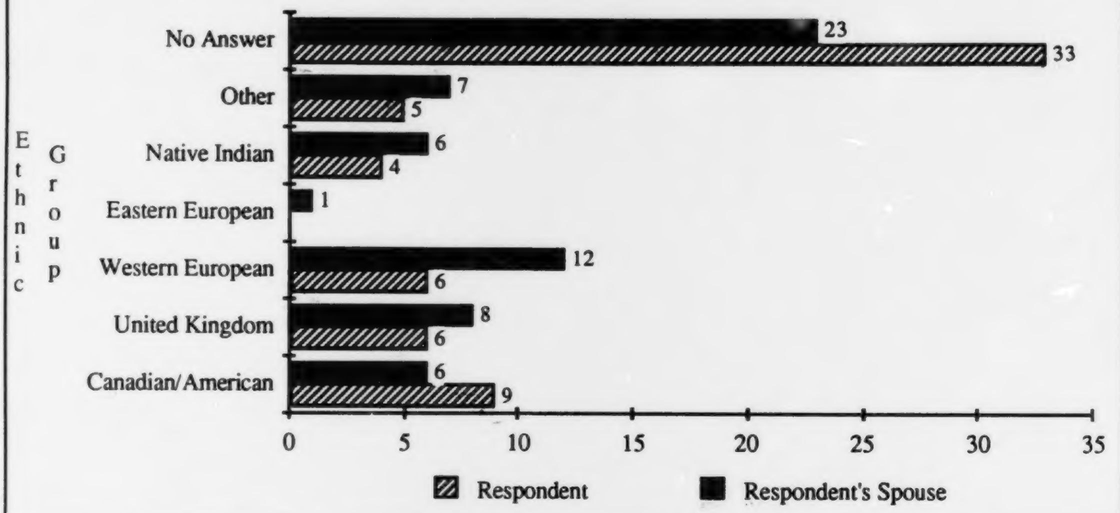


Figure 3.5: Ethnic Background of Respondent's and Their Spouses.

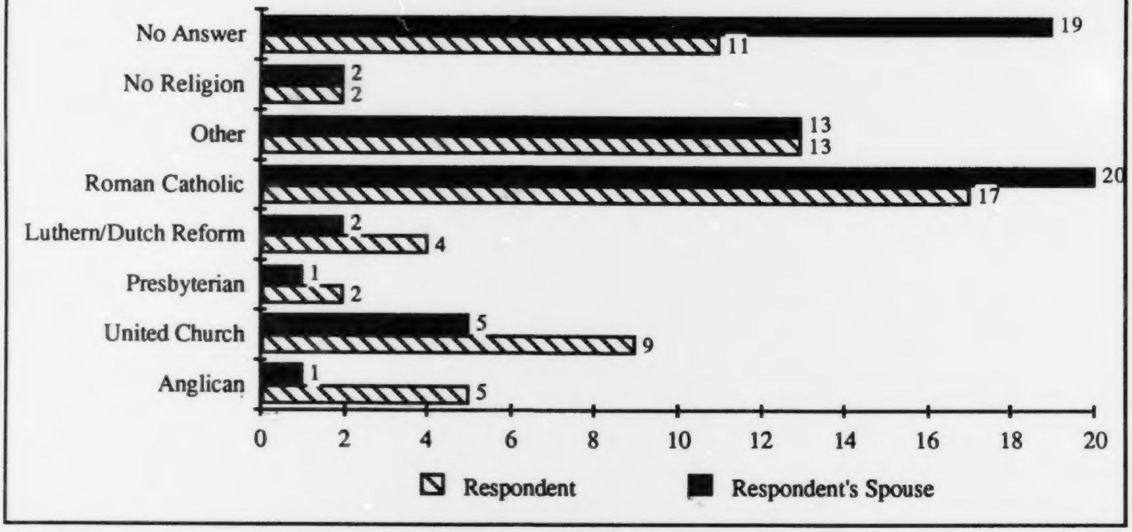


Figure 3.6: Religious Affiliation of Respondent's and their Spouses.

Figure 3.7: Respondent's Current Employment Status.

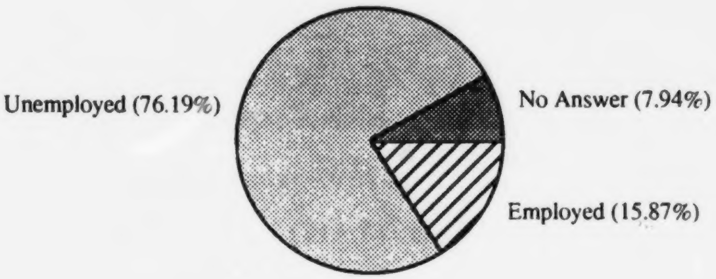


Figure 3.8: Respondent's Current Occupation (N = 9).

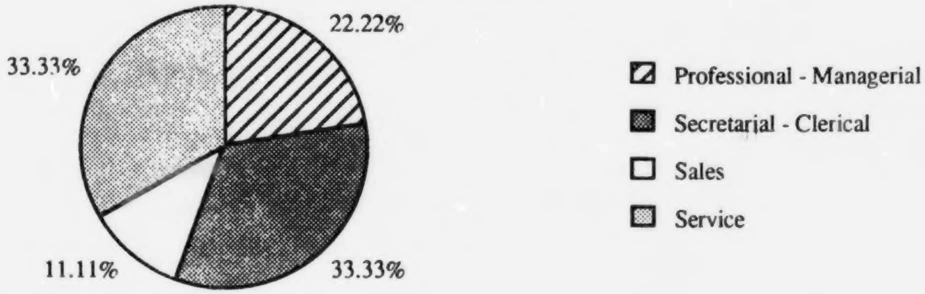
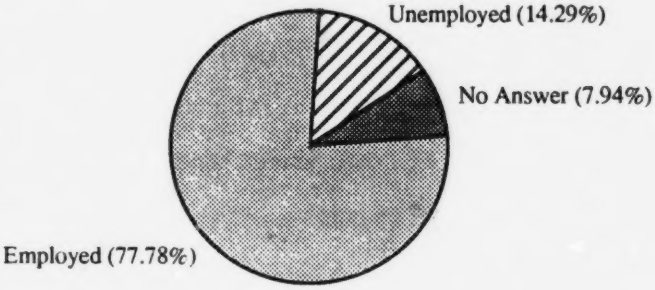


Figure 3.9: Respondent's Spouses Employment Status When Respondent and Spouse Were Together.



manual labor, 1.59% farm labor, and 3.17% in the armed forces as seen in Figure 3.10.

Prior to living at Discovery House, 86 percent of the women were employed (Figure 3.11) in professional-managerial (14.29%), secretarial/clerical (34.92%), sales (9.52%), service (11.11%), skilled and semi-skilled labor (9.52%) and housewife (1.59%) types of occupations (Figure 3.12). Also, while they were employed, 59 percent of the women worked full-time and 24 percent worked in part-time jobs (Figure 3.13). This period covered twelve years prior to their admission to Discovery House. In total, 34.92% were employed at some time in 1984-1985. Specifically, 4.8 percent of the women were last employed in 1974-75, 3.29 percent in 1976-77, 6.35 percent in 1978-79, 14.3 percent in 1980-1981 and 17.5 percent of women were employed sometime in 1982-83 (Figure 3.14).

In reference to income earned in previous employment, 1.6 percent of the women earned less than $3,600 per year, 14.3 percent earned between $3,600 and $7,200 per year, 31.8 percent earned between $7,201 and $10,800 per year, 9.5 percent earned between $10,801 and $18,000 per year and 14.3 percent earned over $18,000 per year (Figure 3.15). At the same time, 1.6 percent of their batterers earned less than $7,200 per year, 6.4 percent earned between $7,200 and $10,800, 36.5 percent earned between $10,801 and $18,000 and 23.8 percent earned over $18,000 per year (Figure 3.16). Of the women whose batterers were unemployed during the study period, they cited the following as their batterer's source of income: welfare (9.5%); unemployment insurance (9.5%); life insurance (1.6%);

Figure 3.10: Spouses Current Occupation.

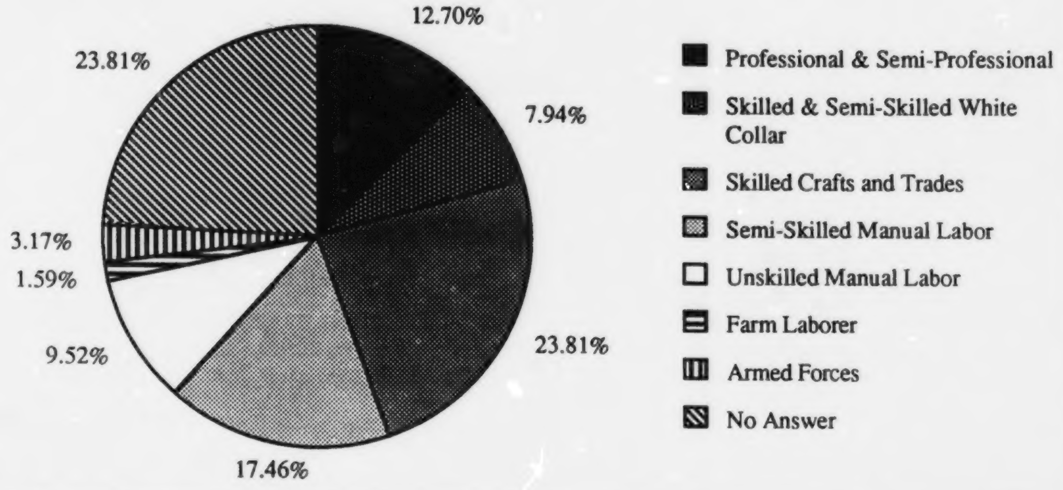


Figure 3.11: Respondent's Employment History.

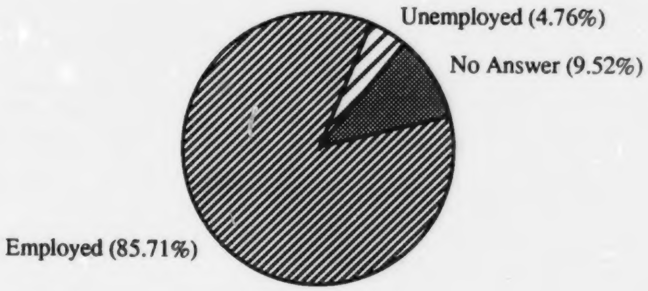


Figure 3.12: Respondent's Occupational History.

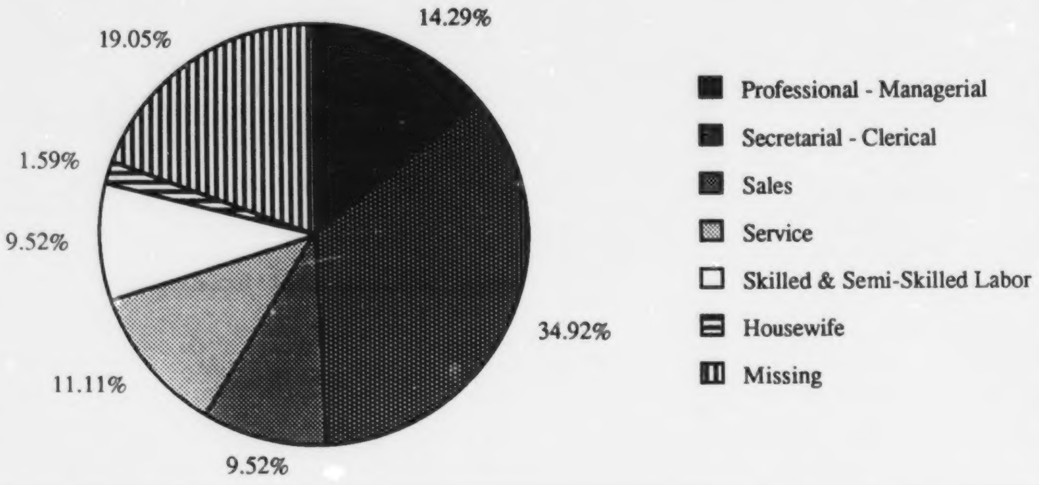


Figure 3.13: Respondent's Employment Status Prior To The Study Period.

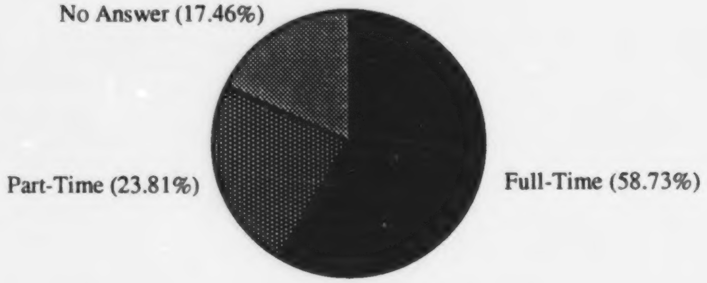


Figure 3.14: Last Year that Respondent was Employed, Of the Unemployed Women.

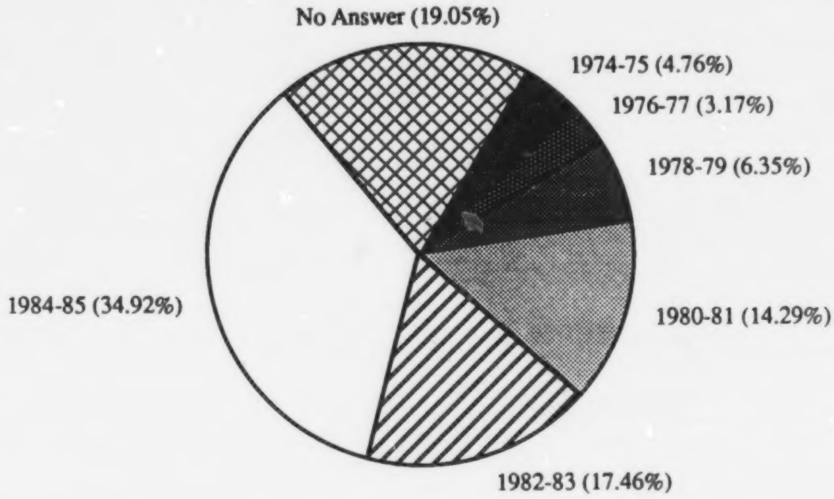


Figure 3.15: Respondent's Average Income per Year, In Previous Occupations.

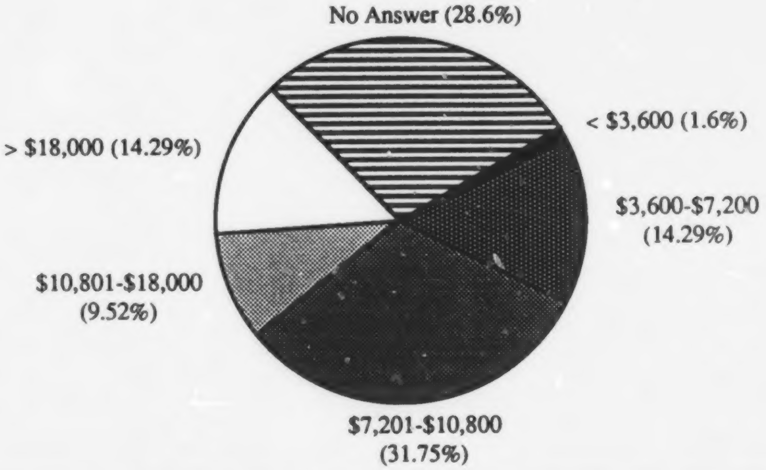


Figure 3.16: Respondent's Spouses Approximate Take-Home Pay per Year.

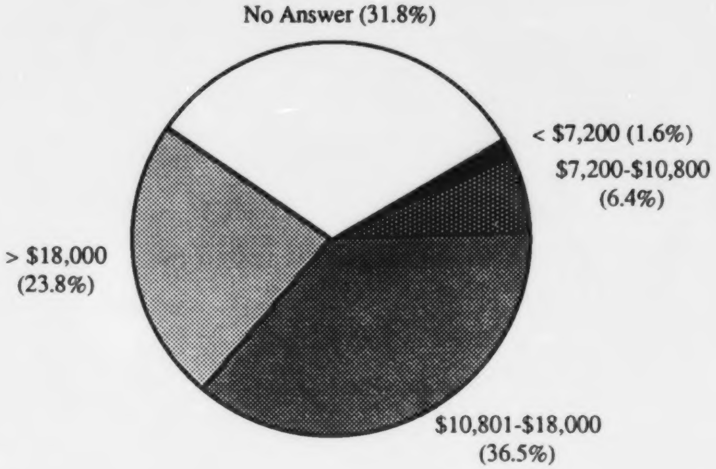


Figure 3.17: Respondent's Spouses Source of Income.

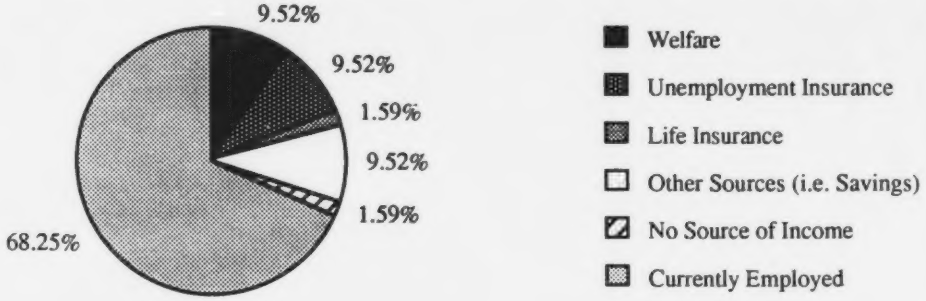
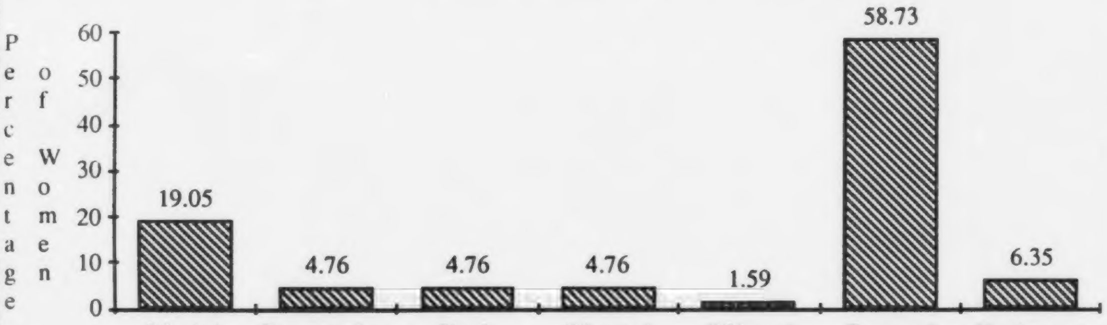


Figure 3.18: Respondent's Marital Status Over The Study Interval.



other sources, i.e., savings (9.5%) and 1.6 percent reported that their batterer had no source of income (Figure 3.17).

3.1.2 Marriage and Family

Figure 3.18 indicates that during the study period, 65 percent of the women were either divorced (4.8%), widowed (1.6%) or separated (58.7%) from their batterers. The remainder of the women were either married (19.1%), living common-law (4.8%) or single (4.8%). In addition, it was noted that of those women who were married or living common-law with the individual who battered them, on average they had been married 7.2 years. Specifically, 17.5 percent of the women had been married or lived common-law with the individual who battered them 1-3 years, 22.2 percent 4-6 years, 9.5 percent had been married 7-9 years, 15.9 percent 10-12 years, 7.9 percent 13-15 years and 1.6 percent had lived with the individual who had battered them sixteen or more years (Figure 3.19). Finally, Figure 3.20 indicates the percentage of women whose marriages had been prearranged by either family or relatives. As indicated, 5 percent of the women at Discovery House had prearranged marriages.

In general, 44 percent of the women at Discovery House tended to live near to their immediate family and close relatives while 39.5 percent lived over one hundred miles from their nearest relative (Figure 3.21). In addition, since they first started cohabitating (married or common-law) with their batterers, the women and their batterers moved an average 6.6 times over the course of their relationship (Figure 3.22). Indeed, over 73 percent of our sample

Figure 3.19: Number of Years Respondent Married To Individual Who Battered Them (Mean=7.17).

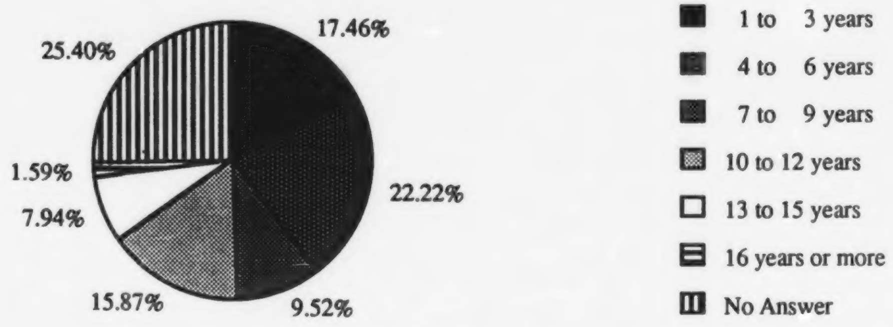


Figure 3.20: Percentage of Women Having Pre-Arranged Marriages.

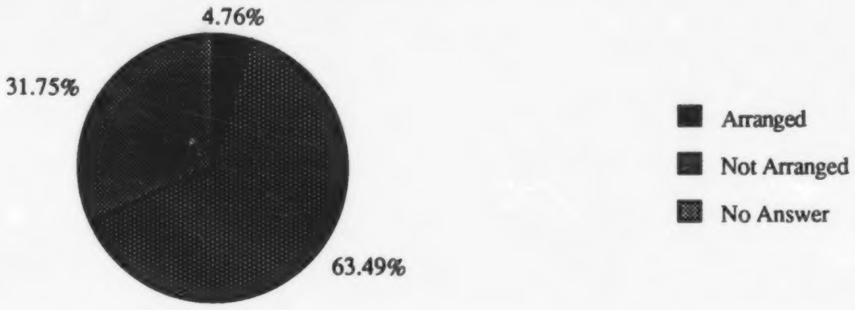


Figure 3.21: Living Distance From Relatives, When Respondent Lived With Spouse.

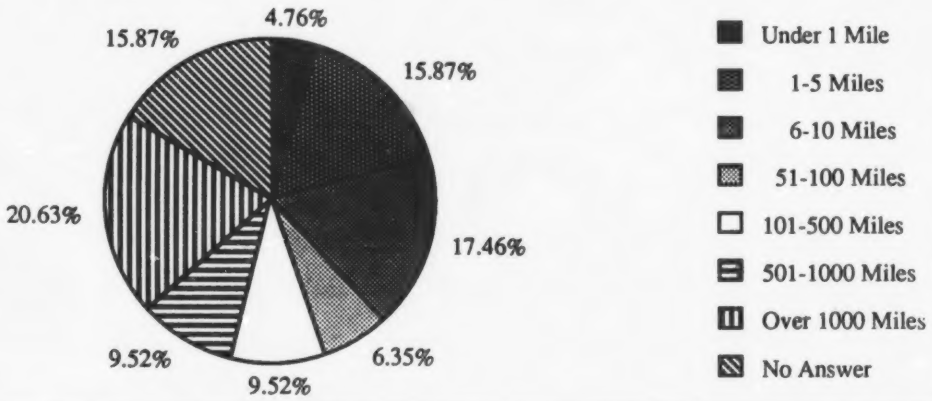


Figure 3.22: Number of Times Respondent's and Their Spouses Moved Since They Were First Married.

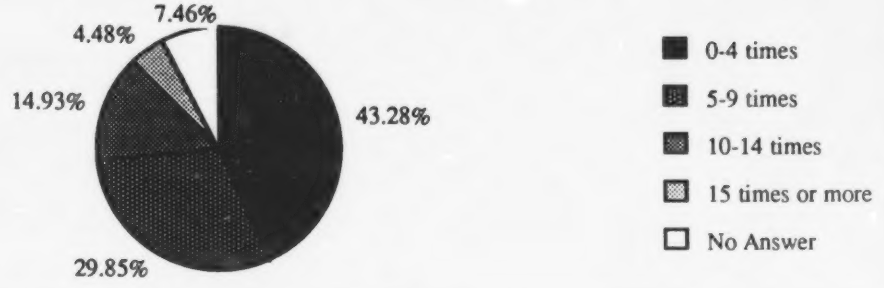


Figure 3.23: Whether Respondent's and Their Spouses Lived with Their Parents When They Were 16 Years Old.

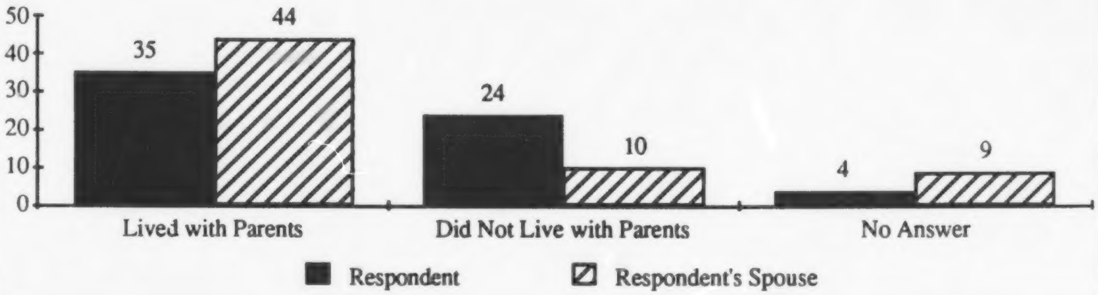
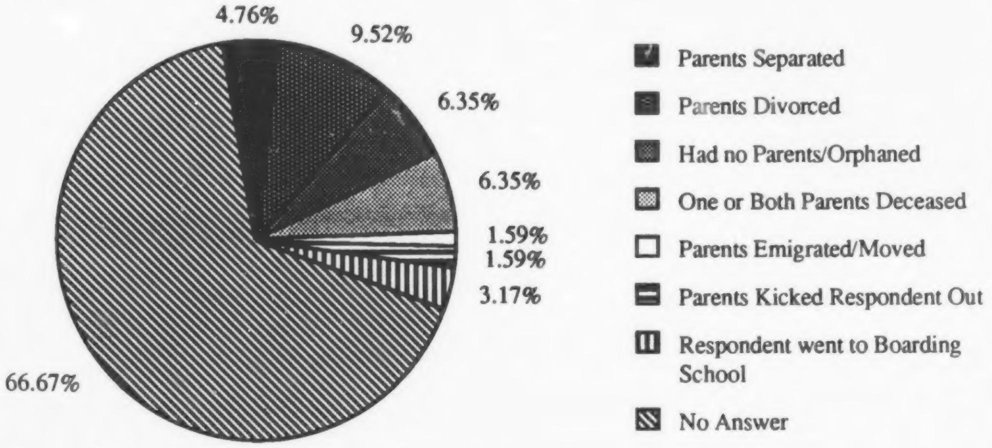


Figure 3.24: Reasons Why Respondent Did Not Live With Their Parents When They Were 16 Years Old.



reported that they had moved up to nine times over the course of their relationship.

3.1.3 Summary

In summary, the results suggested that the women who stayed at Discovery House and who participated in this study had diverse backgrounds with differing ethnic, religious, educational and occupational characteristics, as did their batterers. Overall, it would seem that the women residing at Discovery House were between the ages of nineteen and forty-seven, were from Alberta, were Roman Catholic, had an average education of eleven years, worked in clerical/service oriented occupations and were either divorced or separated from their batterers. Their batterers seemed to share a comparable background. The majority of women reported that their batterers were between twenty-one and fifty-seven years old, were Roman Catholic, had an average education of ten years and tended to work in skilled and semi-skilled white collar and manual occupations.

3.2 The Family Histories of the Women and Their Batterers

According to Figure 3.23, 55.6 percent of the women and 69.8 percent of their batterers were living with their parents when they were sixteen years old whereas 38.1 percent of the women and 15.9 percent of their batterers were not living with their parents at that time. Of the 38 percent of the women not living at home when they were sixteen, 33 percent of them cited the following reasons for why they did not live at home at that time: their parents were separated or divorced (14.3%); they had no parents or one or both parents were deceased (14.3%); their parents had kicked them out (1.6%); or, they were living in boarding school at that time (3.2%) (Figure 3.24).

In terms of the marital status of their parents, it was found that 59 percent of the women reported that their parents were either married (46%) or living common-law (3.2%), whereas 40 percent said that their parents were either divorced (7.9%), widowed (23.8%) or separated (7.9%) (Figure 3.25). On the other hand, they reported that 49.2 percent of their batterer's parents were either married (38.1%), living common-law (1.6%) or remarried (9.5%). The remaining were divorced (7.9%), widowed (19.1%) or separated (7.9%). As shown in Figures 3.26 and 3.27, 32 percent of the women in this sample reported that they had observed some form of violence between their parents sometimes (19.1%), often (6.3%), always (6.34%). In addition, the women reported that they observed some form of verbal or mental abuse (3.2%), physical abuse (11.1%), both verbal and physical abuse (9.5%) and verbal, physical and sexual abuse (2%) between their parents. At the same time, the women reported that 41.3 percent of their batterers observed some form of violence between their parents (sometimes, 14.3%; often, 14.3%; and always, 12.7%). While approximately 79 percent of the women did not report what type of violence their batterers had observed when they were children, of the remaining 21 percent, 19.1 percent reported that their batterers had observed some form of physical abuse between his parents and 1.6 percent reported their batterers having observed some form of verbal, physical and sexual abuse between his parents.

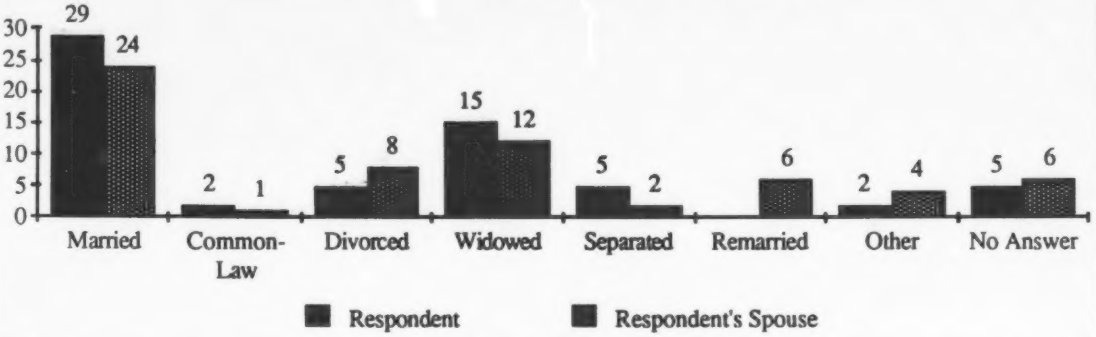


Figure 3.25: Marital Status Of Respondent's And Their Spouses Parents.

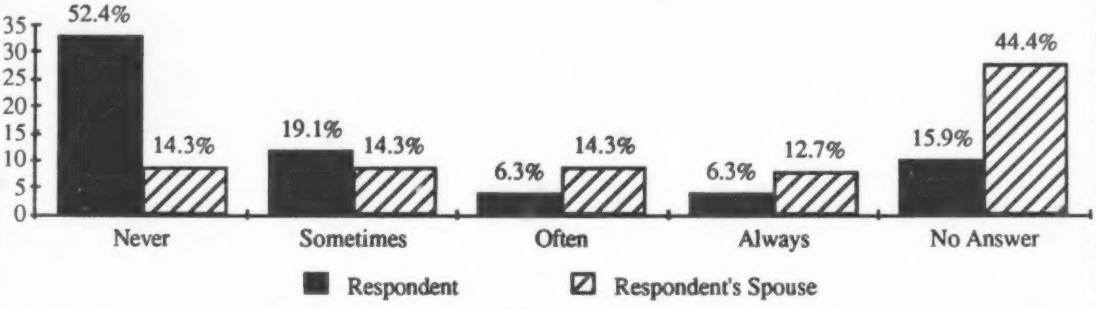


Figure 3.26: Severity of Violence Respondent's And Their Spouses Observed Between Their Parents When They Were Children.

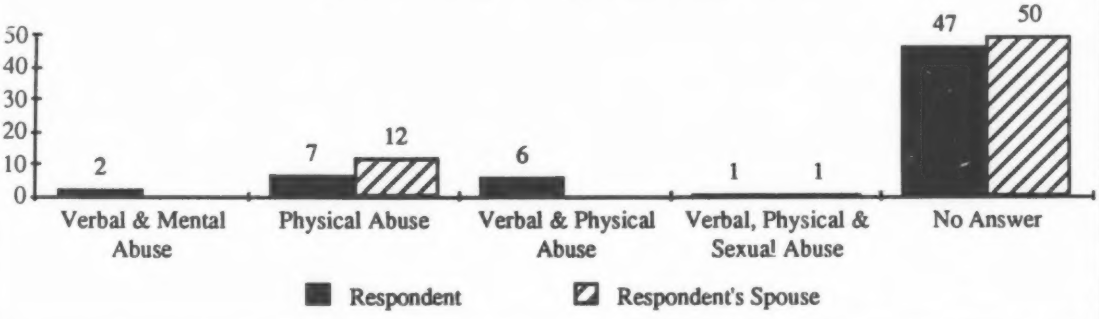


Figure 3.27: Type of Violence Respondent's and Their Spouses 0bserved Between Their Respective Parents.

3.2.1 Childhood Experiences

In terms of the women's experiences as children, as indicated in Figure 3.28, 75 percent report that they received some form of physical punishment (sometimes, 44.4%; often, 23.8%; always, 6.3%). In addition, Figure 3.29 indicates that approximately 70 percent of the women reported that their punishment was usually mild or moderate, while 11 percent suggested that they had received severe punishments as children. Conversely, 67 percent of the women reported that their batterers had received some form of punishment as children (sometimes, 34.5%; often, 15.9%; always, 15.9%). Additionally, 52.4 percent of the women reported that their batterers had received moderate (28.6%) to severe (28.8%) punishments as children.

In general, the majority of the women reported that their father was the individual who usually punished them (23.81%). Nineteen percent of the women reported that their mothers were the ones who punished them and 14.29 percent suggested that both parents usually punished them (Figure 3.30).

In reference to the women's views of their batterer's personal history of violence, the women reported that 49.2 percent of their batterers had a tendency to fight with other children when they were young (Figure 3.31). In addition, 39.68 percent reported that their batterers abused members of his family (Figure 3.32). Specifically, they reported that 4.7 percent abused their father, 1.6 percent abused their mother, 19 percent abused either their brothers or sisters, and 12.7 percent said their batterers had abused both their parents and their siblings (Figure 3.33).

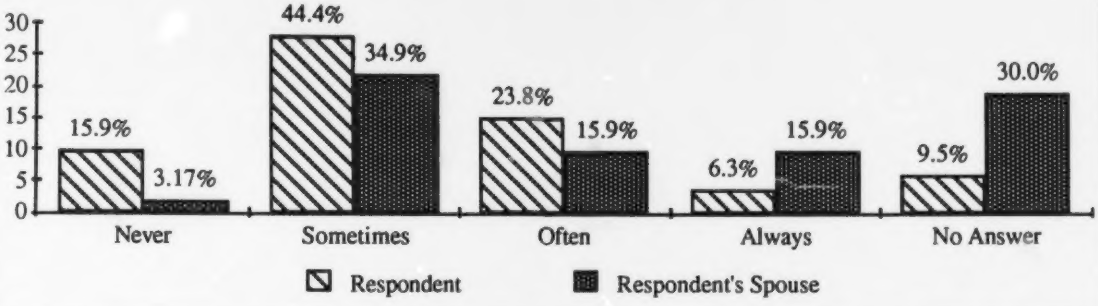


Figure 3.28: Frequency of Punishment The Respondent's and Their Spouses Received as Children.

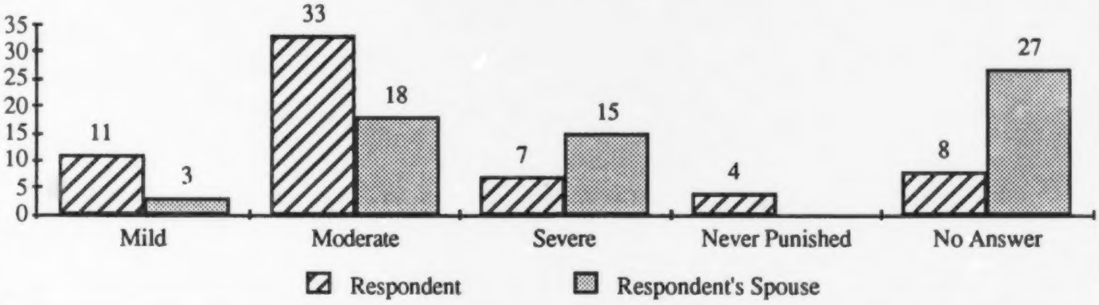


Figure 3.29: Severity of Punishment Respondent's And Their Spouses Received When They Were Children.

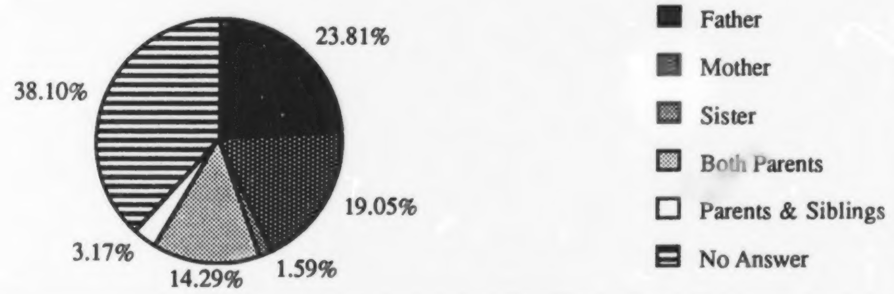


Figure 3.30: Identification of The Inidividual Who Usually Punished Respondent when they Children.

Figure 3.31: Spouses History of Violence When They Were Children.

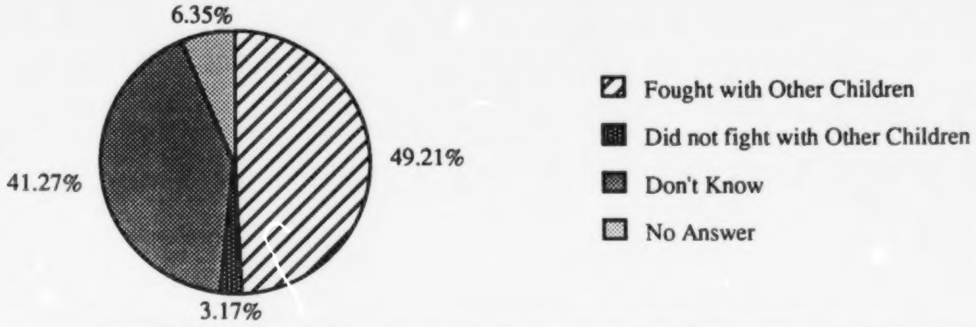


Figure 3.32: Spouses History of Violence, whether or Not He Abused Members of His Family.

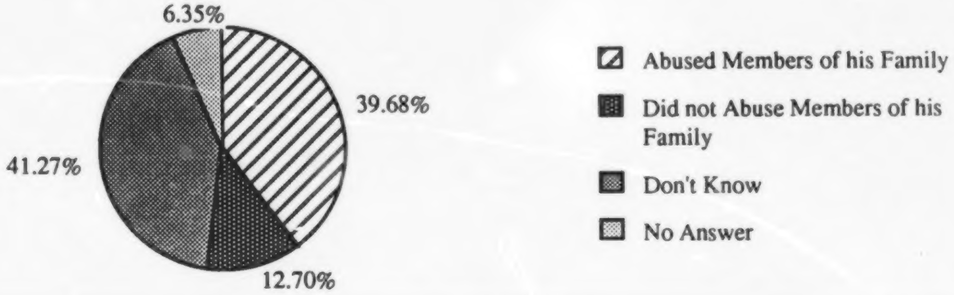
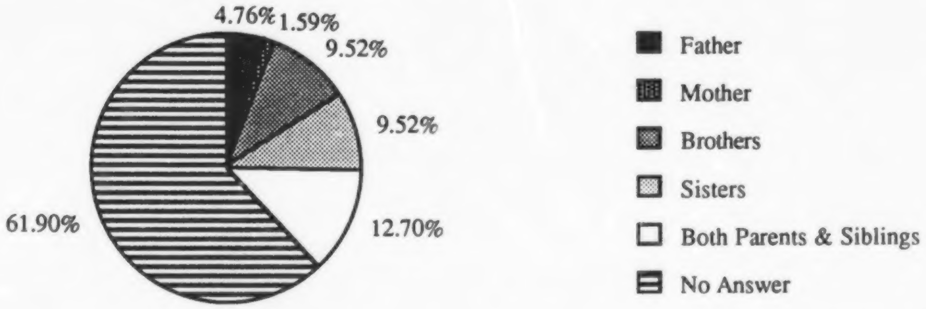


Figure 3.33: Family Members That The Respondent's Spouse Had Abused.



Finally, 35 percent of the respondents (Figure 3.34) themselves suggested that they had been abused by their parents (33.3%), their siblings (4.8%), and other relatives (9.5%), a boyfriend or ex-boyfriend (14.3%) and by an ex-husband (23.8%) (Figure 3.35). Of the twenty-one women who had been assaulted by an individual other than their husband, 15 percent described the assault as consisting of verbal abuse, 25 percent reported that they were sexually abused, and 50 percent reported that they had experienced some form of physical abuse (Figure 3.36).

To briefly summarize the findings thus far, it was generally found that the family backgrounds of the women and their batterers only differed slightly. It could be suggested that while their batterers tended to come from a somewhat more stable background, they tended to have experienced considerably more episodes of violence in terms of witnessing a higher degree of, and severity of, violence between their parents. Moreover, it would seem that the batterers appeared to carry these tendencies into adulthood. In terms of the women, they did witness some violence between their parents and they did experience a sizable proportion of violence themselves. These findings, however, suggest that the overall family backgrounds of the women and their batterers were not much different from the results of a similar Canadian study (Sample Survey and Data Bank Unit, University of Regina, 1984) or several American studies (Pagelow, 1981; Walker, 1984).

Figure 3.34: Was Respondent Ever Assaulted By Another Individual.

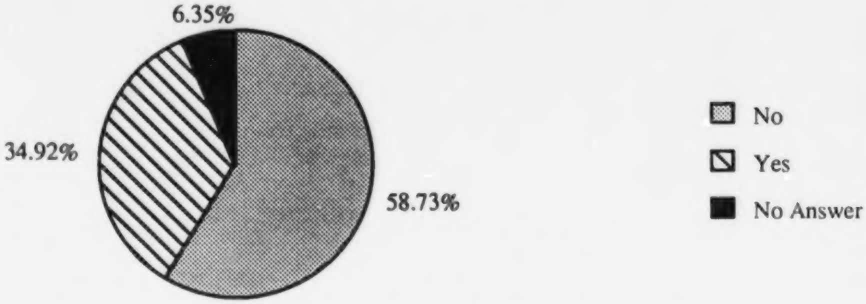


Figure 3.35: Identification Of Other Individuals Who Have Assaulted Respondent In The Past (N=21).

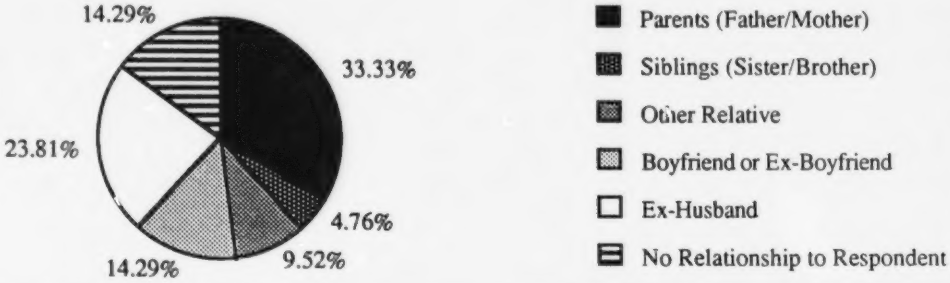
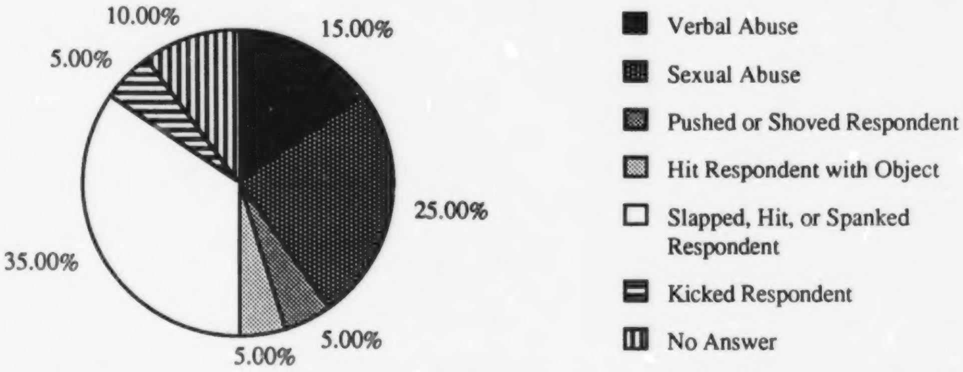


Figure 3.36: Description of What Happened When Respondent Was Assaulted by Individual Other Than Husband (N=21).



3.3. The Battering Relationship: The Women's Most Recent Experiences

The following analysis is derived primarily from a range of questions dealing with an exact description, in the women's own vocabulary, of their most recent experiences in a battering relationship. In particular, the following analysis focuses upon the type of abuse (physical, mental and/or sexual) they experienced, how the respondent felt about their batterer's behavior, what the women did about the battering, i.e., if they left, how long they left for and why they returned.

3.3.1 Who Abused Them, Type of Abuse and Frequency of Abuse

Overall, 79 percent of the women participating in this study reported that the individual who physically abused or battered them was their husband (Figure 3.37). The remainder identified the person who abused or battered them as an ex-husband (3.2%), a boyfriend (1.6%), an ex-boyfriend (6.4%) or some combination of their husband or boyfriends (7.9%). In general, 71.42 percent of the women said they had received some form of physical abuse, 17.5 percent said the type of abuse they had received was verbal or psychological and 3.2 percent reported that they had been sexually abused (Figure 3.38). Specifically, the women described the type of physical abuse they had experienced as consisting of the following actions: batterer slapped, hit or spanked them (23.8%); batterer wrestled or twisted their arm (9.5%); batterer tried to strangle them (1.6%); batterer pulled their hair (4.8%); pushed or shoved the respondent (4.8%); or, threw something at the respondent (4.8%) (Figures 3.38 and 3.39). Despite these findings, when asked specifically if they had been sexually abused in their last battering

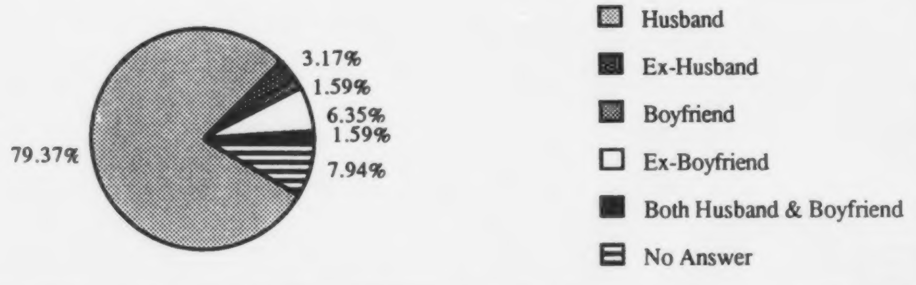


Figure 3.37: Individual Who Physically Abused or Battered Respondent.

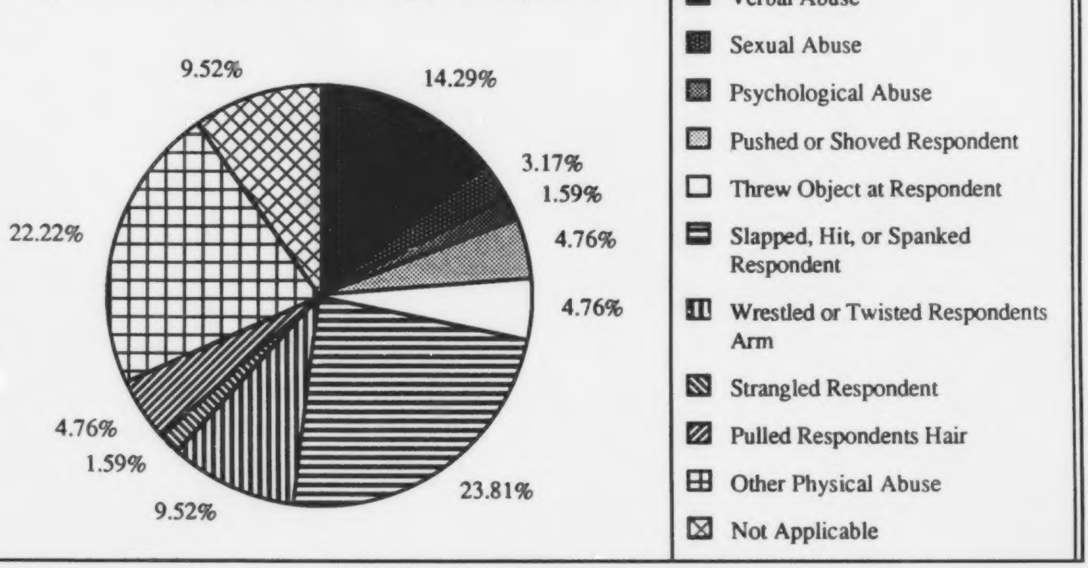


Figure 3.38: The Type of Abuse The Respondent Experienced.

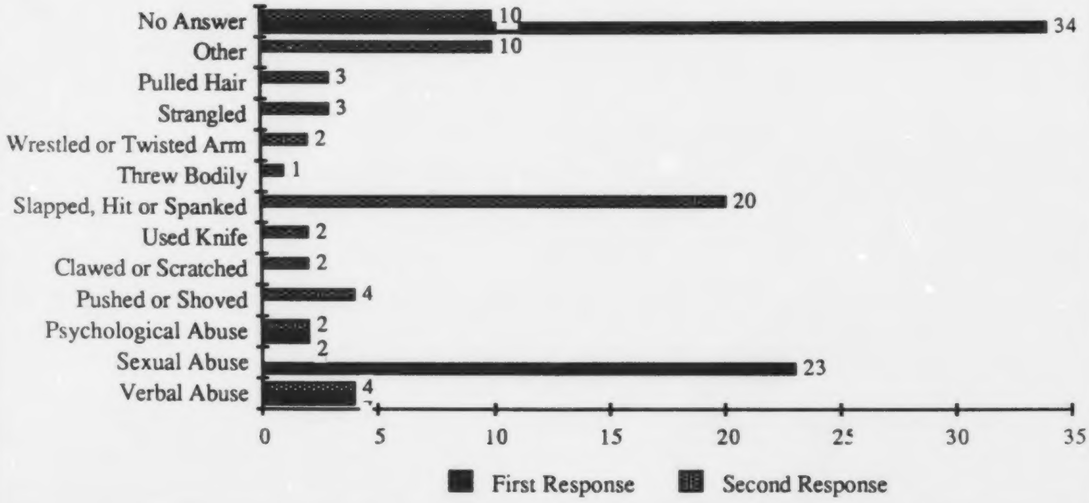


Figure 3.39: Type of Abuse Received Prior to Coming to Discovery House.

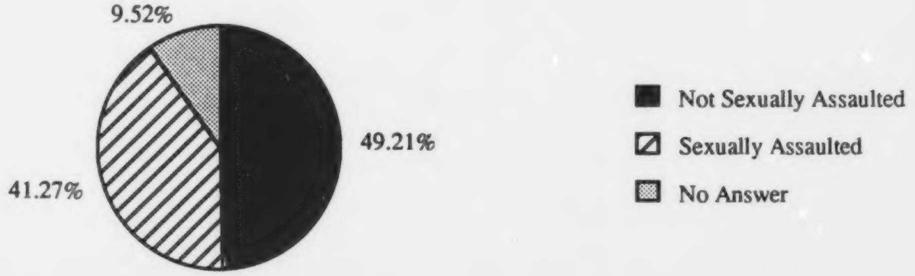


Figure 3.40: Percentage of Women Who Were Sexually Assaulted During Abuse.

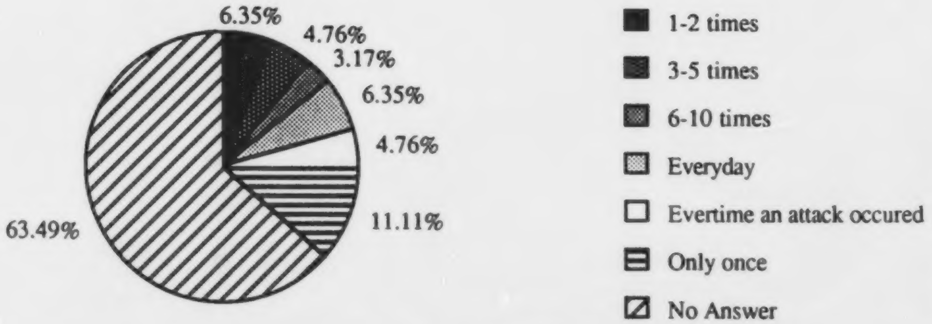


Figure 3.41: Frequency of the Occurence of Sexual Assault.

relationship, 41.3 percent of women reported that they had (Figure 3.40). Of the women who said that they had been sexually assaulted, 11.1 percent reported only one occurrence of sexual abuse during the course of their last relationship, 6.5 percent said they were sexually abused everyday and 4.8 percent suggested that the sexual abuse only occurred in conjunction with an incident of physical abuse (Figure 3.41). Our study indicated that approximately 24 percent of the women were pregnant at the time they married (Figure 3.42), and 35 percent of the women reported that, in general, they were physically battered during pregnancy (Figure 3.43).

In terms of the frequency, duration and severity of the abuse the women received, 54 percent reported that they were assaulted from a minimum of once a month to a maximum of one or more times a week (Figure 3.44). In addition, 47.6 percent of the women reported that an average attack would last between one minute to one hour, 4.5 percent said that an assault would last more than one hour and 7.9 percent suggested that the amount of time varied (Figure 3.45). In general, 60 percent of the women said that the severity of the battering that they received was moderate to severe, while 17.5 percent suggested that the assault was not severe at all (Figure 3.46). Finally, 73 percent of the women reported that, in general, an attack of physical abuse was concentrated in the upper body area; i.e., head-face, 61.9%; neck, 6.3%; breasts, 1.6%; and arms, 3.2% (Figure 3.47).

As Figure 3.48 indicates, 63.5 percent of the women generally tended to hide the injuries they received from their batterers. They did so in a number of ways. Most commonly, as Figure 3.49 suggests

Figure 3.42: Percentage of Respondents Who Were Pregnant at the Time of Marriage.

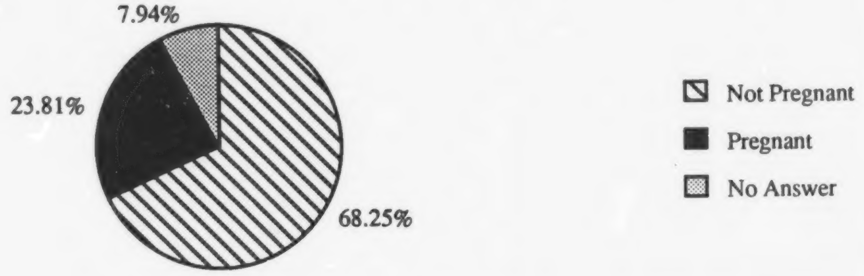


Figure 3.43: Percentage of Respondents Who Were Battered While They Were Pregnant.

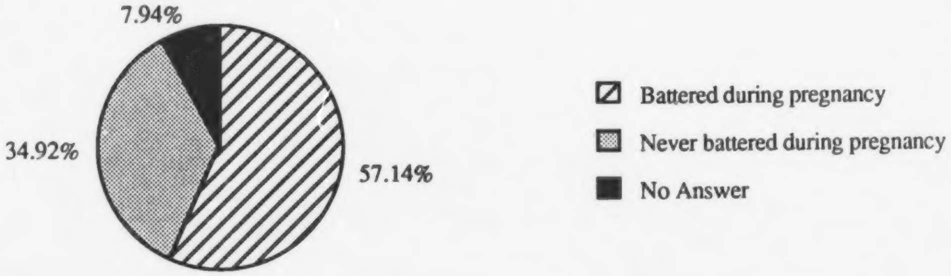
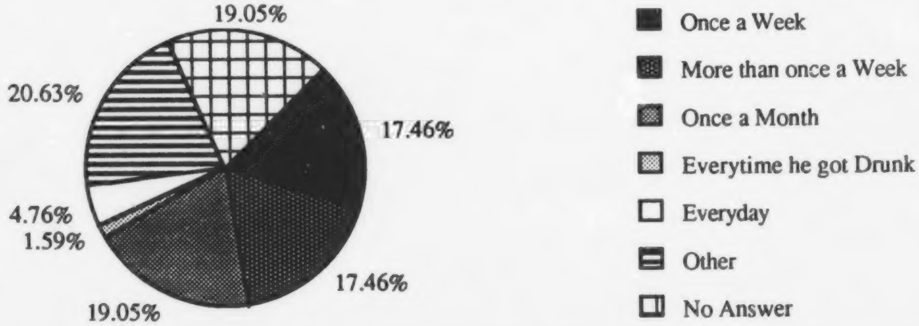


Figure 3.44: Frequency with which Respondent was Abused, 1984 - 1985.



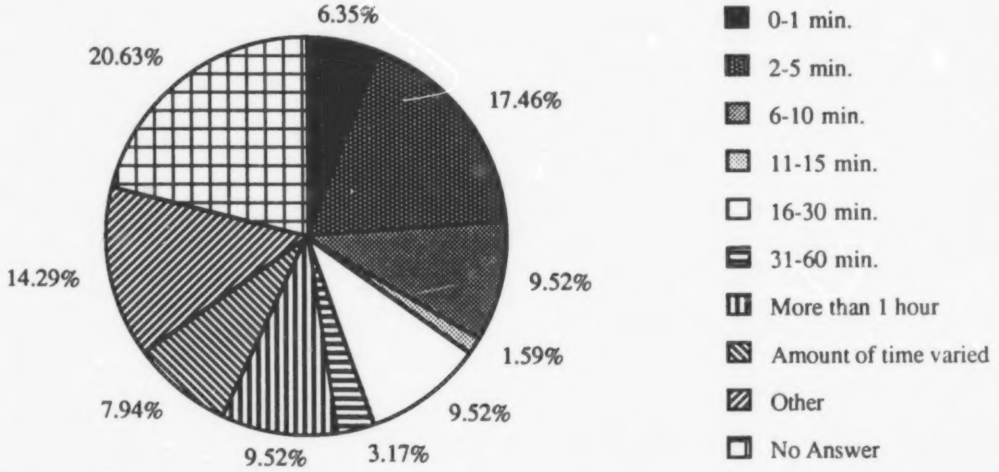


Figure 3.45: Average Amount of Time That an Attack Would Last for Respondent.

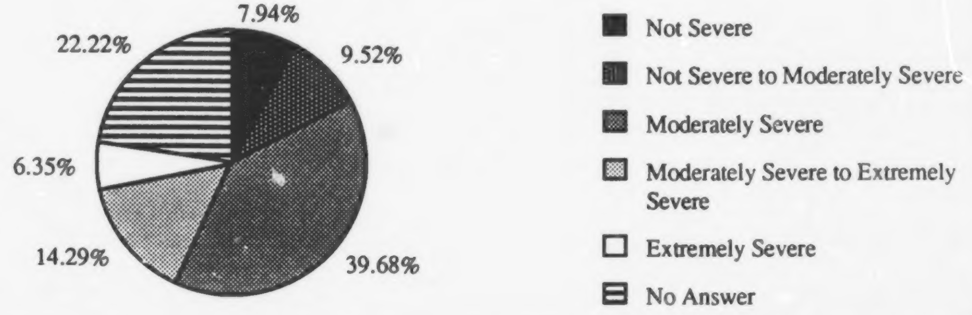


Figure 3.46: Severity of Attacks Respondent Received.

Figure 3.47: Portion of Body Which Was Most frequently Attacked.

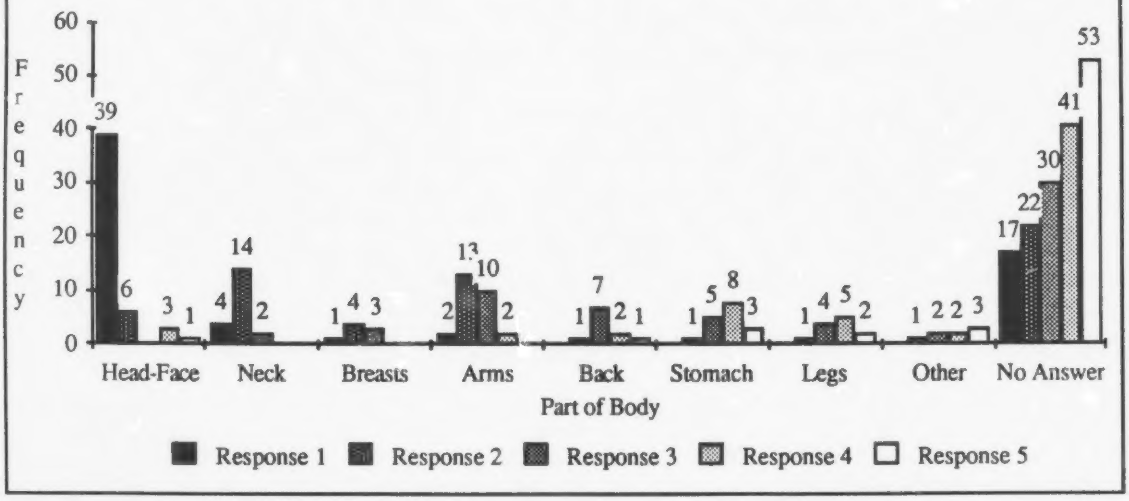


Figure 3.48: Whether Respondent Hid Injuries or Not.

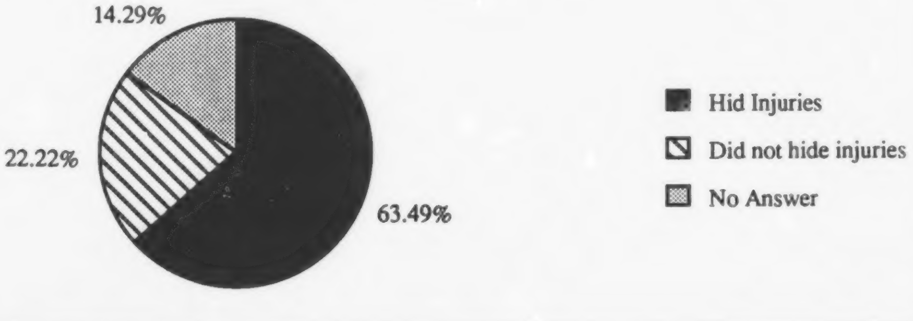
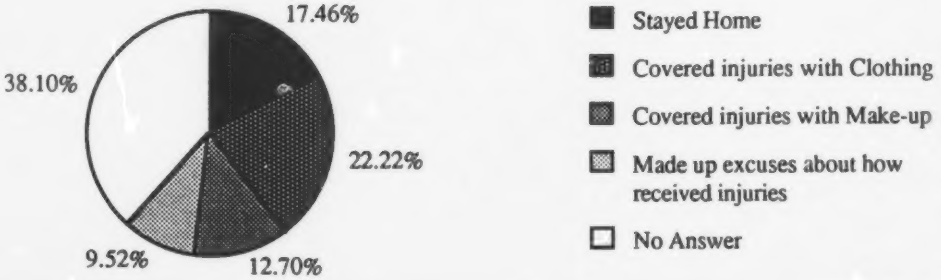


Figure 3.49: Description of What Respondent did to Hide Their Injuries, 1984 - 1985.



the women would hide their injuries with clothing or make-up (34.9%). Other ways that the women hid their injuries were that they either made-up excuses when someone asked (9.5%) or that they wouldn't go out or see anyone (17.5%). The most common reasons that they cited for why they hid injuries was that they felt embarrassed or ashamed (37.1%). Their other reasons for hiding their injuries included: they were afraid of their batterer or their batterer had insisted or forced them to (4.8%); the women felt guilty about the situation (1.6%); or, they just didn't want anyone to know about the abuse (16.1%) (Figure 3.50).

3.3.2 Feelings About Attacks and What the Women Did.

Overall, the women listed a wide range of subjective emotions that they felt about their batterer's behavior (Figure 3.51). Most notably, however, were feelings of fear and terror (29.2%). Other emotions that the women cited as feeling after an assault included: ashamed and humiliated (4.6%); surprised (4.6%); powerless (3.1%); self-blame and depression (3.1%); humiliated and confused (10.8%); hatred and anger (9.7%) and shocked and disgusted (13.9%). For the most part, however, 54 percent of the women said that they did nothing about their batterer's behavior and 3.2 percent said that they fought back (Figure 3.52). The remainder of the women cited a number of responses to their batterer's behavior including: left or kicked their batterer out, 11.1 percent; discussed the situation with their batterers, 12.7 percent; and, they either avoided their batterer, called the police, or sought out marital counselling, 7.9 percent.

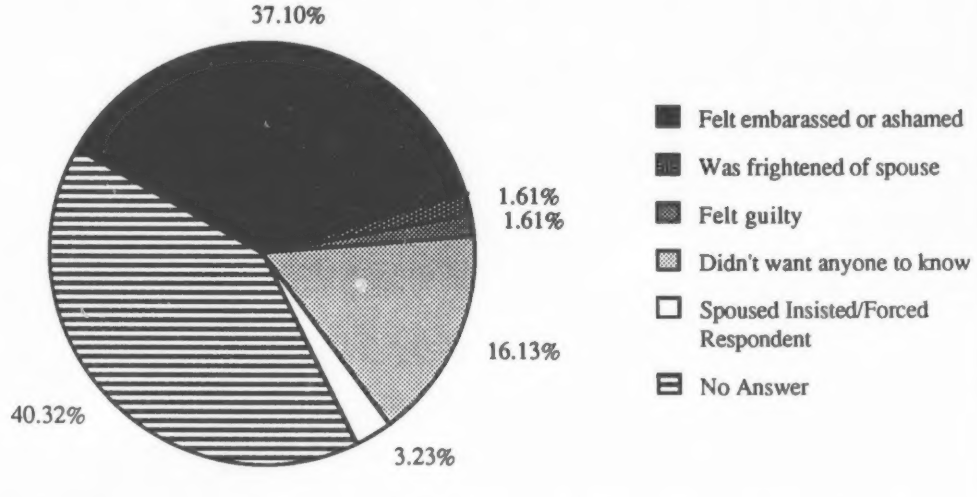


Figure 3.50: Reasons Why Respondents Hid Their Injuries.

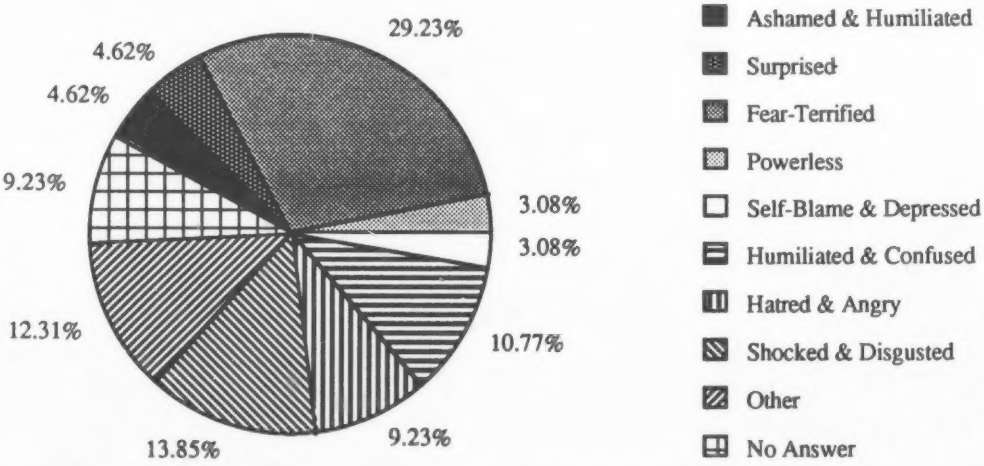


Figure 3.51: Respondent's Feelings about Spouses Violent Behaviour, 1984 - 1985.

Figure 3.52: Respondent's Response to Spouses Violent Behaviour, 1984 - 1985.

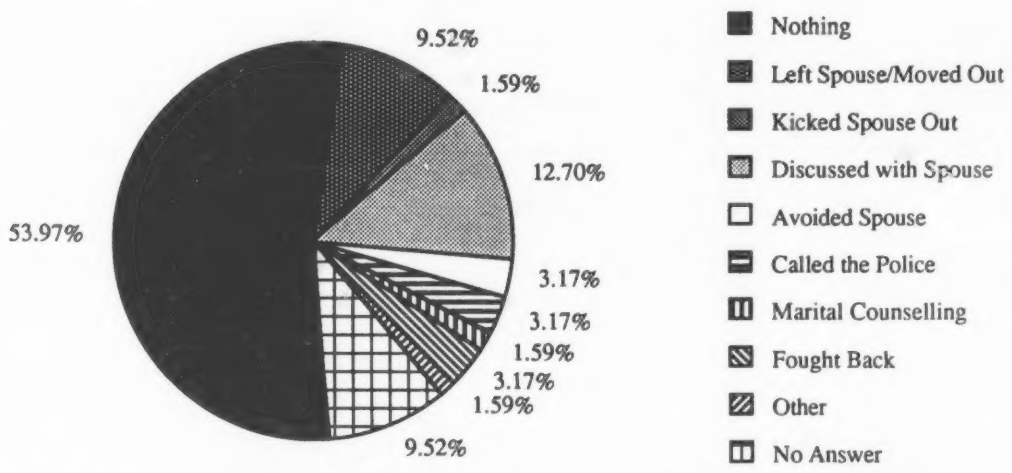


Figure 3.53: Whether Respondent had ever Left Spouse Before arriving at Discovery House, 1984 - 1985.

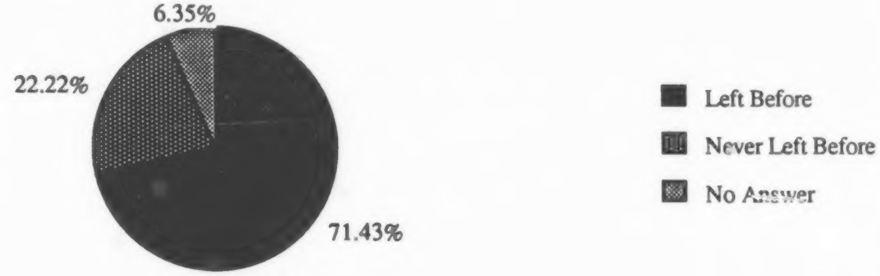


Figure 3.54: Number of Times Respondent has Previously Left Spouse, 1984 - 1985.

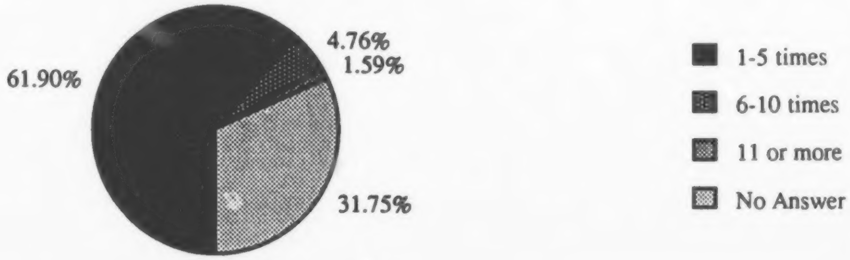


Figure 3.55: Longest Amount of Time Respondent has stayed Left Spouse prior to living at Discovery House.

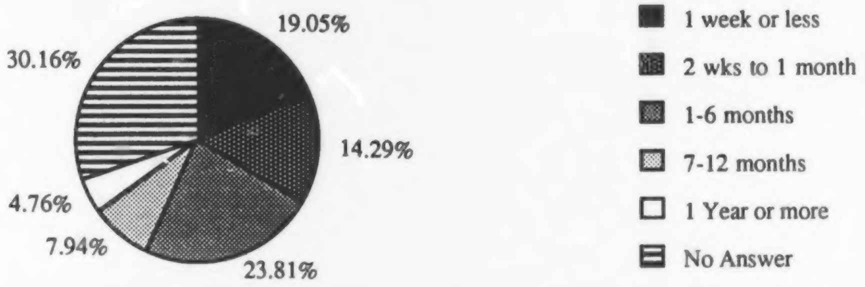


Figure 3.56: Time Period in which Respondent left Spouse, in Relation to the Occurence of Physical Abuse.

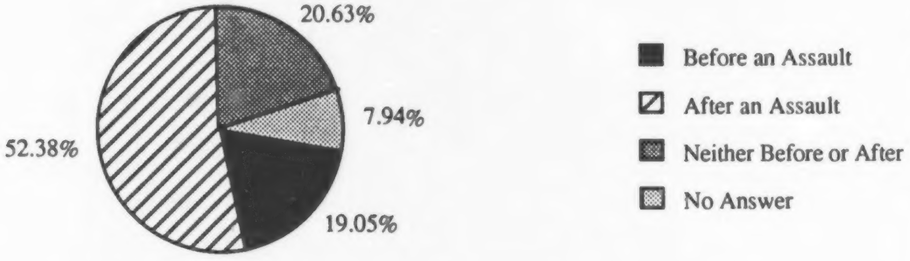
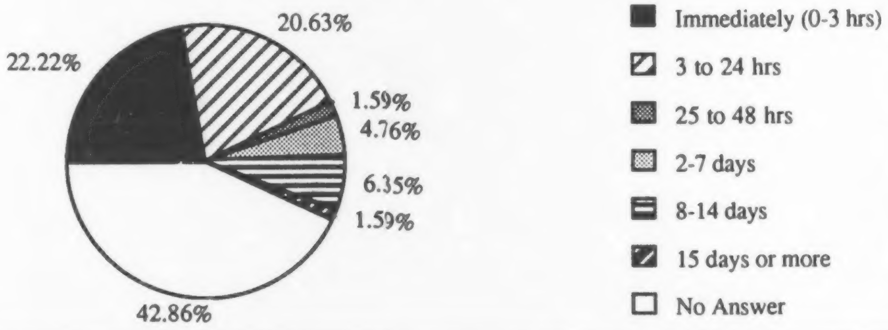


Figure 3.57: Amount of Time after an Assault in which Respondent left, 1984 -1985.



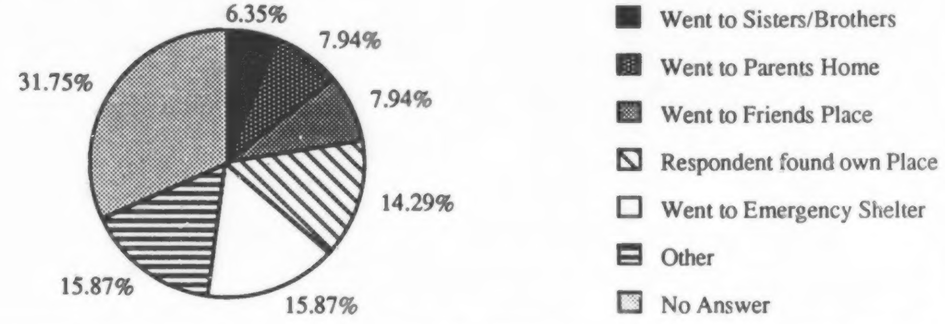


Figure 3.58: Where Respondent went after Leaving Spouse, prior to living at Discovery House.

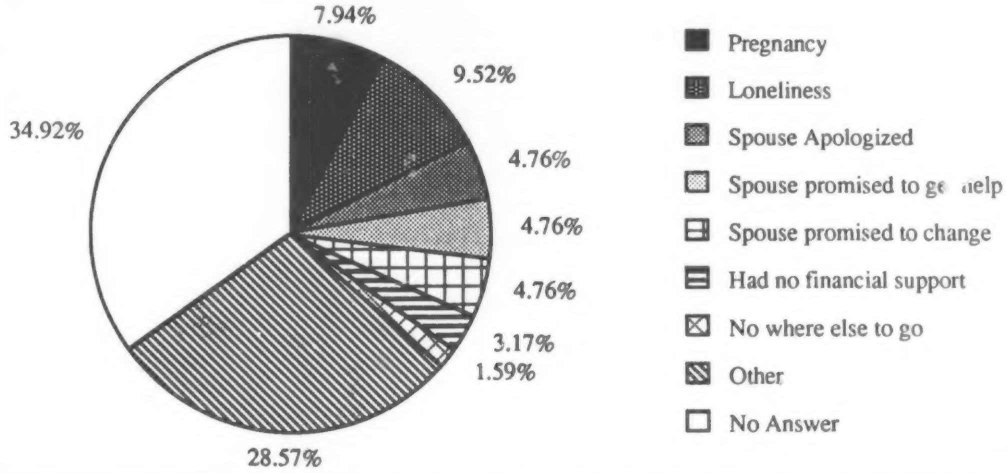


Figure 3.59: Reasons for returning to Spouse after Separation, prior to living at Discovery House.

While approximately 22 percent of the women who participated in this study had never left their batterers before coming to Discovery House, 71 percent reported that they had previously left their batterer (Figure 3.53). Furthermore, of the women who had previously left their batterers, 62 percent had left anywhere from one to five times before arriving at Discovery House (Figure 3.54). In addition, of these women, 36.5 percent reported that they had left for a period of six months or more (Figure 3.55). The remainder said that they had previously left for a period of anywhere between less than one week to six months (33%).

As Figure 3.56 indicates, 52.4 percent of the women living at Discovery House left their batterers almost immediately after an assault had occurred (see Figure 3.57). Generally, the women reported that when they left their batterers they usually went either to a relative's or friend's home (22.2%). In addition, the women also went to an emergency shelter (15.9%) or found their own place (14.3%) after leaving their batterers (Figure 3.58). Finally, the main reasons the women have cited as to why they returned to their batterer on previous occasions included: they were pregnant, could not support themselves, had nowhere else to go, they were lonely or their batterer promised to get help or to change (Figure 3.59).

3.3.3 The Nature of the Attack

The most common observations made by the women in reference to what activities preceded an attack which they thought were related to the occurrence of the abuse, were verbal arguments--sometimes provoked by the women themselves. Indeed, 16 percent of the women

Figure 3.60: Respondent's Explaination of Why they Think an Attack Occurred.

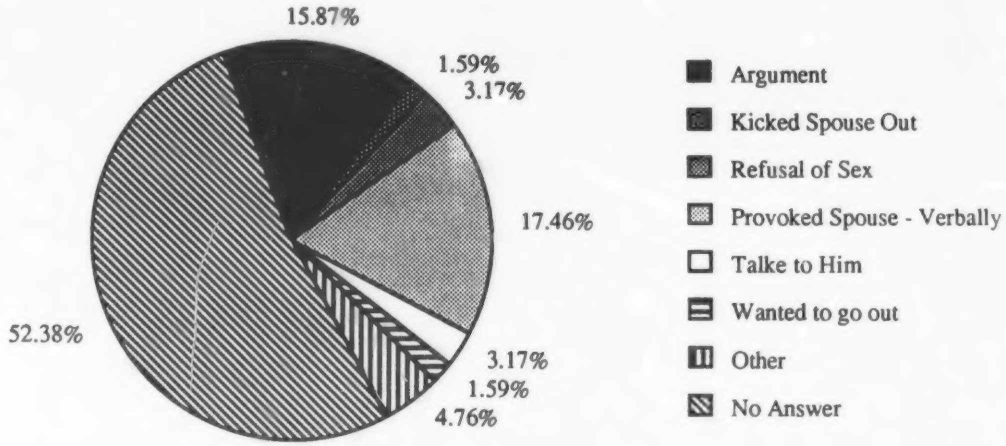


Figure 3.61: Frequency of Verbal Arguments Preceding Respondents Assault.

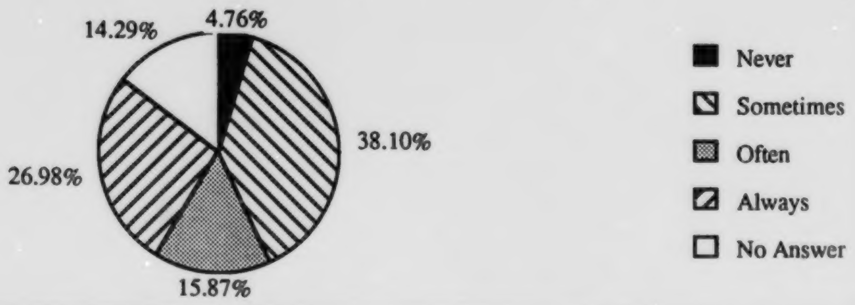


Figure 3.62: Reasons for Aurguments Between Respondents and Their Spouses.

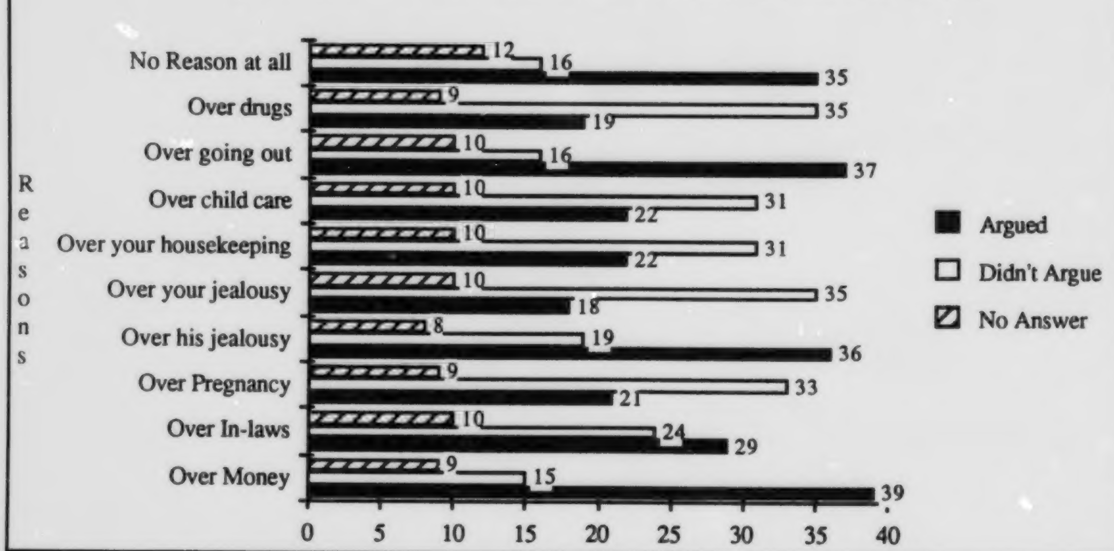
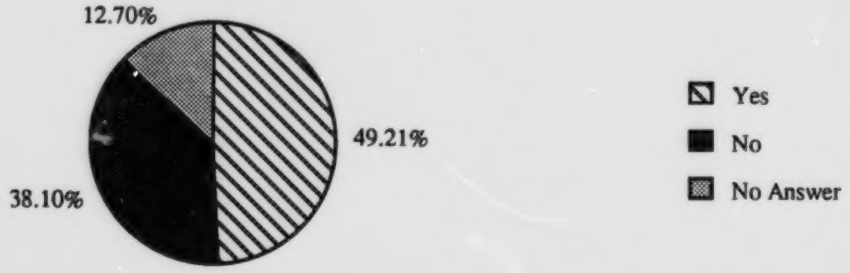


Figure 3.63: Percentage of Women who Thought they had Said or Done Something to Trigger an Assault.



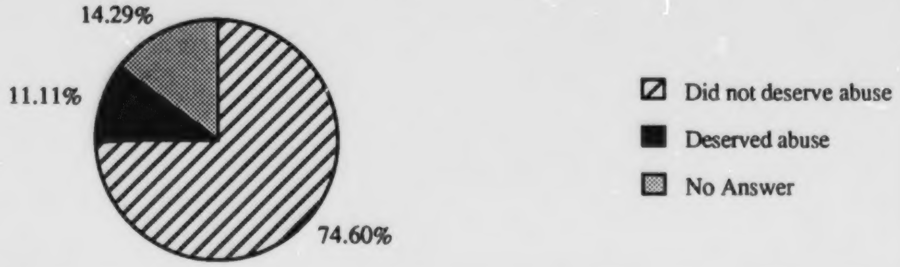


Figure 3.64: Percentage of Respondents who Thought They Deserved the Abuse Received from Spouse.

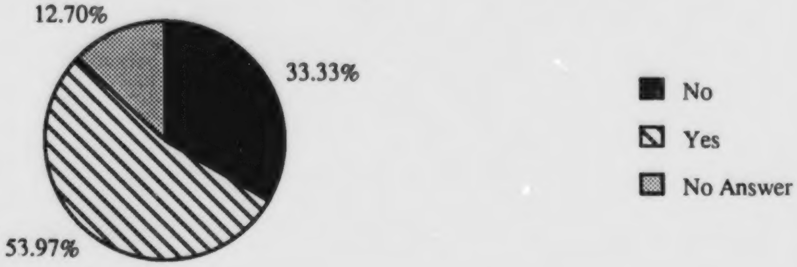


Figure 3.65: Percentage of Respondent Having Fore-knowlege of When Attack was About to Occur.

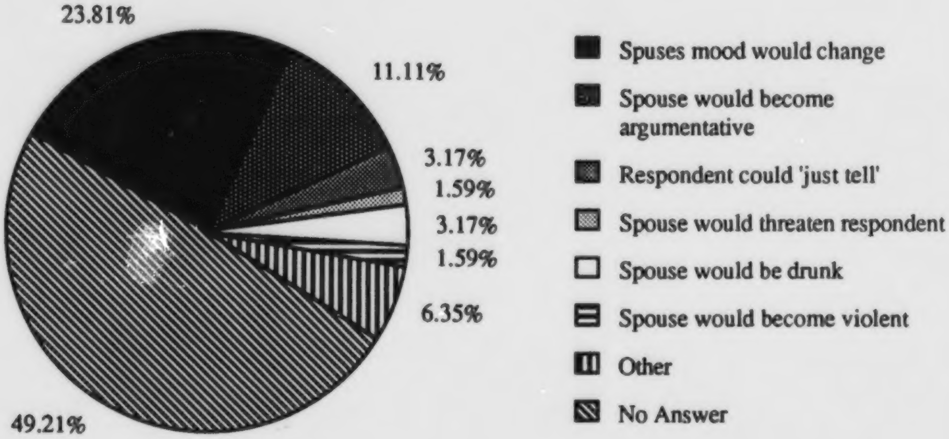


Figure 3.66: Reasons Suggested by Respondents for When They Could Tell an Attack was About to Occur.

reported that an argument usually caused the occurrence of an assault and 17.5 percent reported that they had provoked (verbally) their batterers (Figure 3.60). Furthermore, 43 percent of the women said that arguments occurred on a regular basis and 38 percent suggested that an assault was occasionally preceded by an argument (Figure 3.61). While the reasons they cite for the occurrence of arguments seem to be equal amongst all the women (see Figure 3.62), the most notable included: arguments over money (62%); arguments resulting from his jealousy (57%); arguments over the women going out (54%); and lastly, 56 percent of the women have suggested that there wasn't any particular reason for an argument--they just argued. As an aside, in addition to reporting that arguments tended to be the cause of an assault, almost 50 percent of the women thought that they had "said" or "done" something to trigger an attack (Figure 3.63) but of those, 75 percent thought that they did not deserve the abuse they had received from their batterer (Figure 3.63).

In relation to the above observations, 54 percent of the women noted that they generally knew when an attack was about to occur (Figure 3.65) by a change in their batterer's mood (24%). In addition, as Figure 3.66 indicates, the women said that their batterer would become argumentative (11%), they would threaten or become violent with them (3%) or that they could "just tell" when a violent episode was about to occur (3%). Given this fore-knowledge, the women reported that they would feel (Figure 3.67) frightened or terrified (35%), nervous (6%), helpless and frustrated (3%) and angry (5%). Finally, despite their foresight into the occurrence of the

Figure 3.67: Emotions Respondent Felt Just Before an Attack was About to Occur.

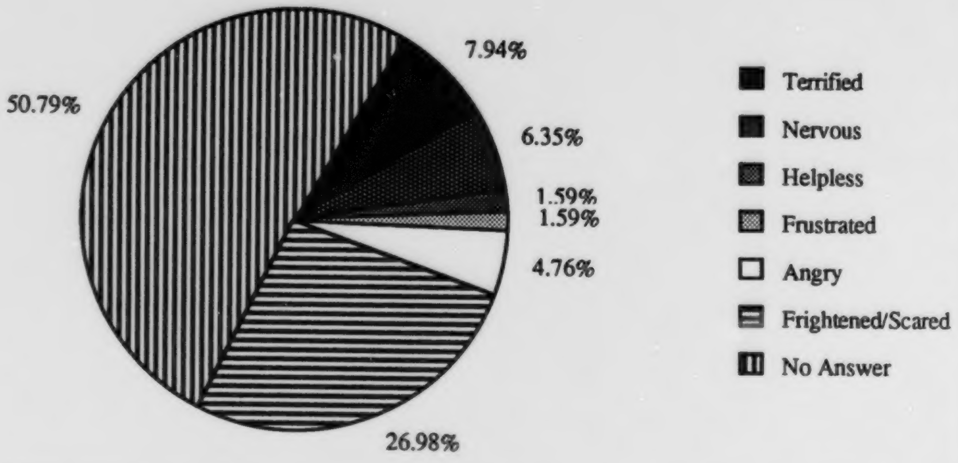


Figure 3.68: Percentage of Respondents who Said That They Did Something About Spouses Behaviour.

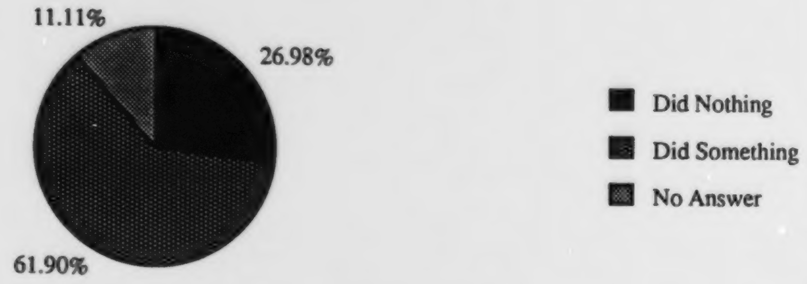


Figure 3.69: Description of What Respondent Did About Spouse Behaviour.

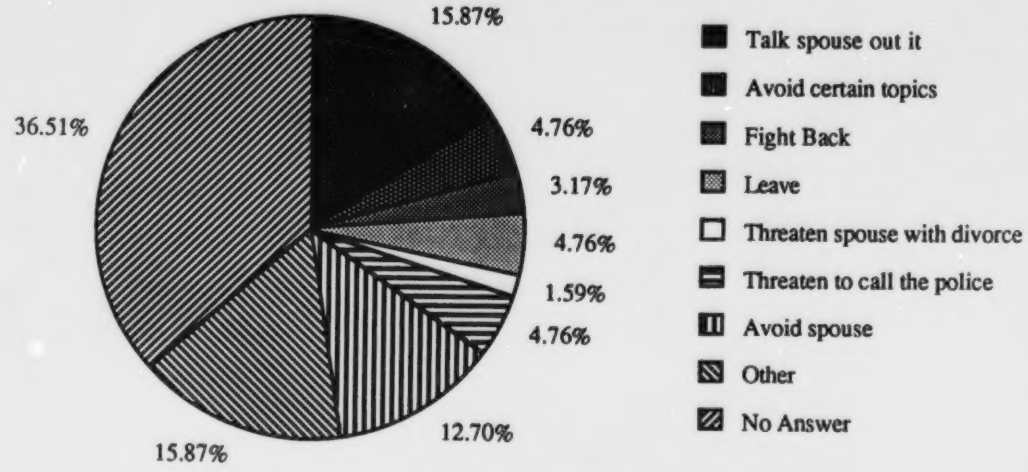


Figure 3.70: Percentage Who Defended Themselves once an Attack Began.

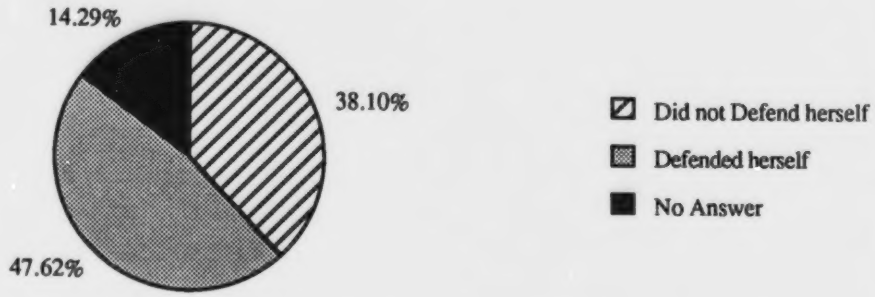


Figure 3.71: Description of Respondents Defense of Themselves.

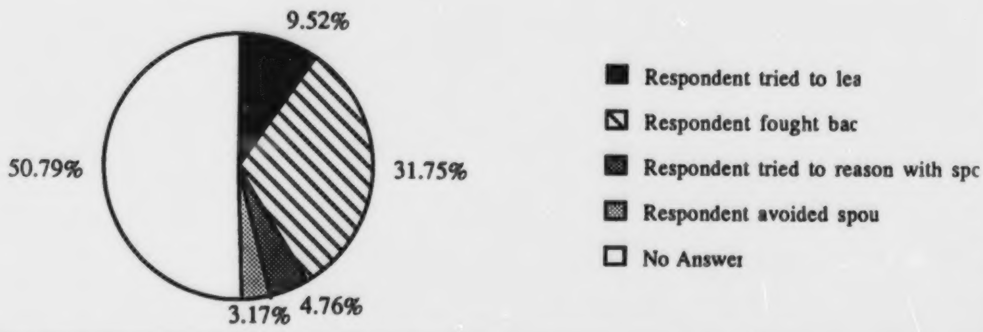


Figure 3.72: Percentage Suggesting That Their Relationship Changed with Spouse, After an Attack.

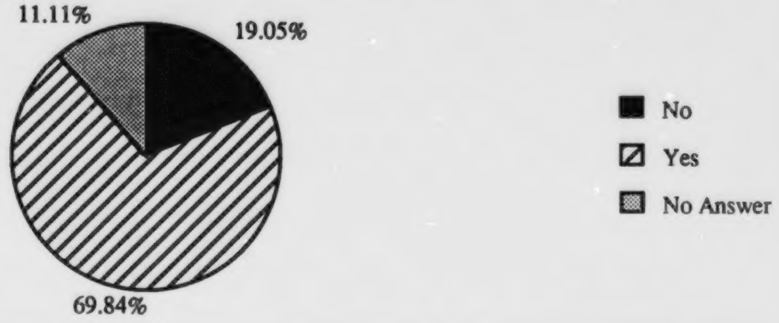
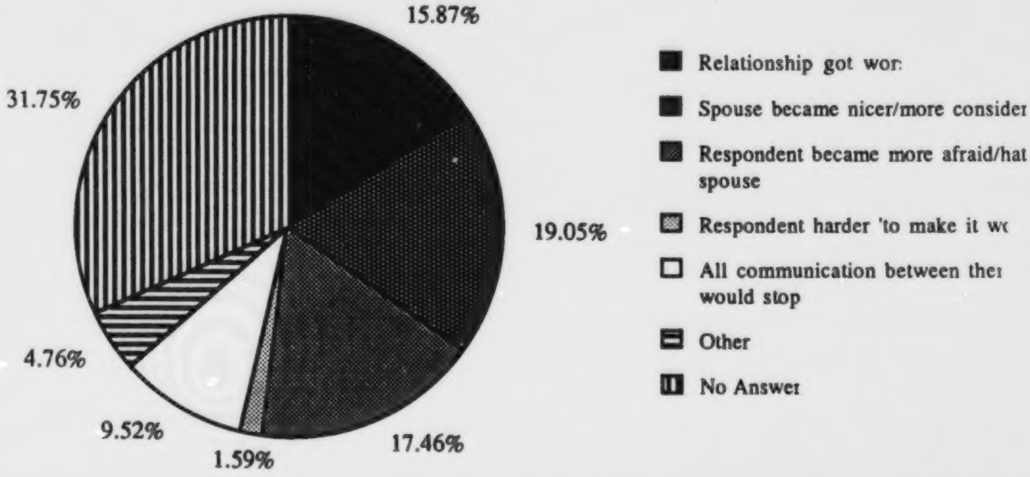


Figure 3.73: How the Relationship Changed after an Attack.



abuse, 27 percent of the women in the study said that they did nothing to prevent an attack (Figure 3.68).

Sixty-two percent of the women reported a number of strategies for preventing an attack. These included: trying to talk their batterer out of it, 15.9 percent; avoiding certain topics which the respondent knew would 'upset' their batterer, 4.0 percent; they would leave, 4.8 percent; threaten to leave, 1.6 percent; threaten to call the police, 4.8 percent; and, some would merely fight back, 4.8 percent (Figure 3.69). However, once an attack began, approximately 48 percent of the women said that they would defend themselves while 38 percent said that they would not (Figure 3.70). Most often, the women fought back physically (32%), however, some would either try to leave or avoid their batterer (12.7%), or try to reason with their batterer (4.8%) (Figure 3.71).

In terms of the actual changes in their relationship with batterers which resulted from the violence inflicted on the women, it appeared that almost 70 percent of the women noted that their relationship did, in fact, change (Figure 3.72). Fifty-two percent of the women suggested that the relationship deteriorated or became worse. Almost 20 percent of the women noted that their batterers would become 'nicer,' more 'considerate and very caring' (Figure 3.73).

While the respondents felt a wide range of feelings after an assault, they generally tended to feel frightened, hurt, humiliated and angry as noted earlier (Figure 3.74). Moreover, over 25 percent of the women reported feeling the same (angry, hurt, humiliated, etc.) four to six weeks after an attack had occurred. The remaining women who participated in this study suggested that the relationship

Figure 3.74: How Respondent Felt About Spouse After an Attack Occurred.

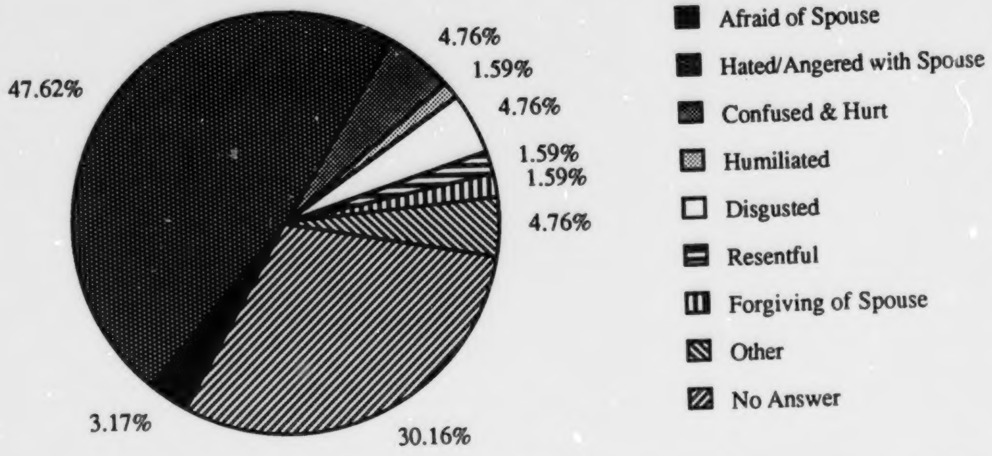


Figure 3.75: How Respondent Felt about Spouse 4 to 6 Weeks After an Attack had Occurred.

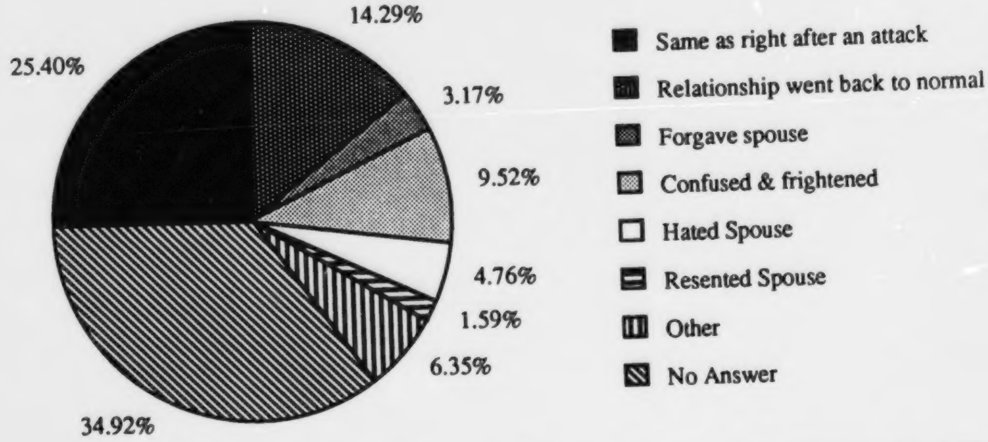


Figure 3.76: Frequency and Severity of Violence of the Span of Respondents Relationship with Spouse.

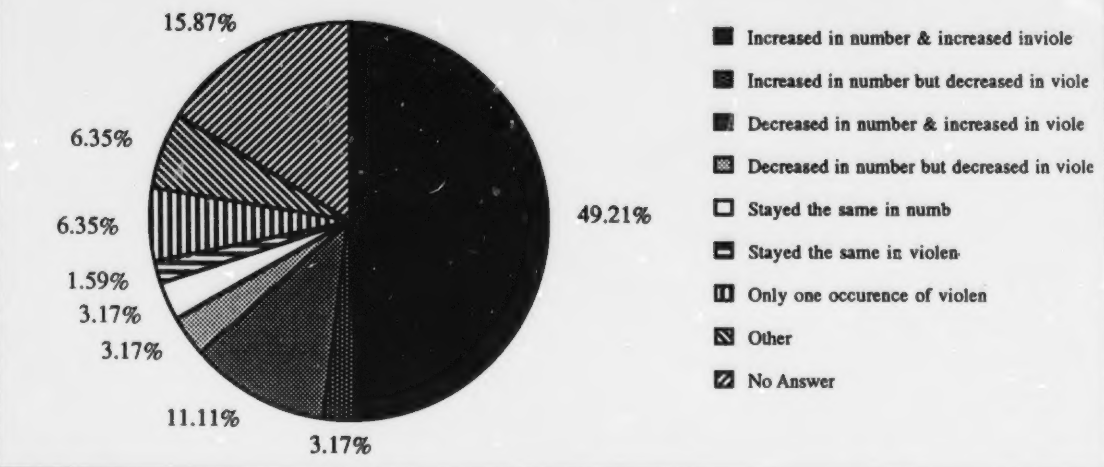


Figure 3.77: Description of What Spouses Used When Battering Respondent.

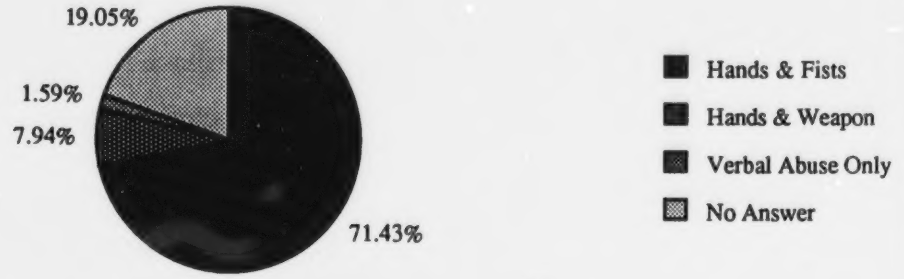
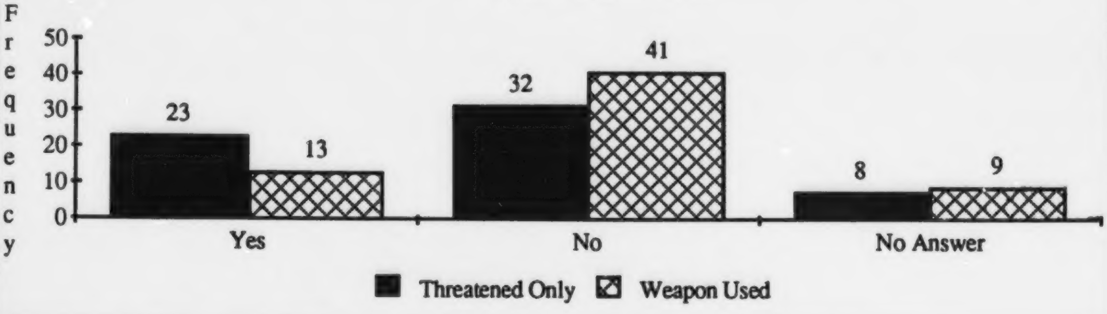


Figure 3.78: Number of Respondents who have been Threatened or Assaulted with a Weapon during an Attack.



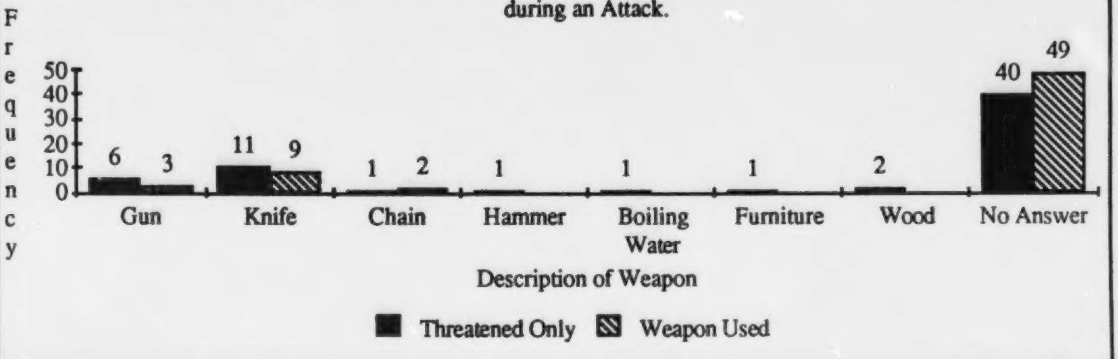


Figure 3.79: Description of the Weapons Respondents were Threatened or Assaulted with during an Attack.

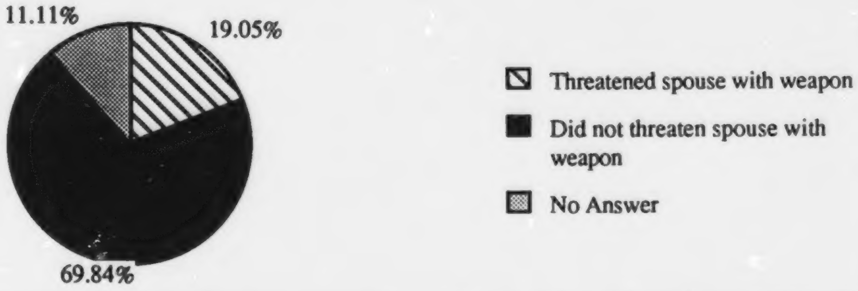


Figure 3.80: Pecentage of Respondents who Threantened their Spouses with a Weapon during an Attack.

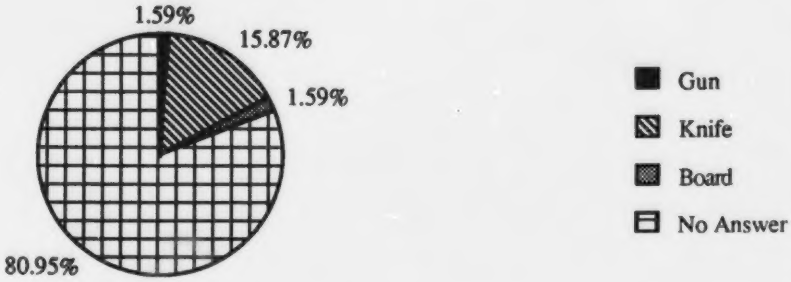


Figure 3.81: Description of the Weapons Respondent Threantened Spouse with during an Attack.

went back to normal and that they forgave their batterers (18%) while 22 percent suggested that their relationship worsened and the women, themselves, became more fearful and confused (Figure 3.75). Finally, after the first incident of violence, approximately 50 percent of the women reported that both the severity and the frequency of their batterer's violence increased throughout the remainder of the time they spent together (Figure 3.76).

In general, 71 percent of the women reported that their batterers did not use any weapons during an attack. However, of these women, 37 percent said they were threatened with a weapon. Twenty-one percent of the women reported that their batterers had actually used a weapon during an attack (see Figures 3.77 and 3.78). Most frequently, the women reported that they were either threatened with a gun or knife (Figure 3.79). While the women themselves did not actually use any weapons to defend themselves, as shown in Figures 3.80 and 3.81, approximately 20 percent reported having threatened their batterers with a weapon; most frequently with a knife (16%).

3.3.4 Who the Women Told

As Figure 3.82 indicates, over 50 percent of the women would generally talk to or tell someone about their relationship. Of those women, 22 percent would tell a friend, 24 percent would tell either a family member or a relative and the remainder would either talk to the police, a minister, a counsellor or a neighbor (Figure 3.83). In general, the reasons the women cited for talking to the above noted individuals included: they just needed to talk to someone (32%), and

Figure 3.82: Percentage of Respondents who Told Someone about the Battering.

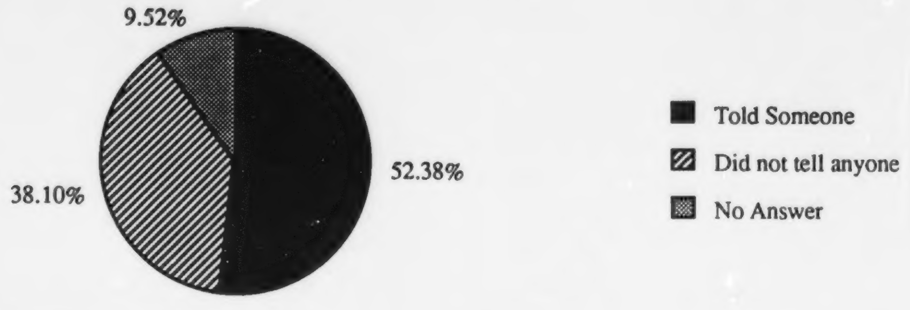


Figure 3.83: Description of Who Respondent Would Tell about the Battering Situation.

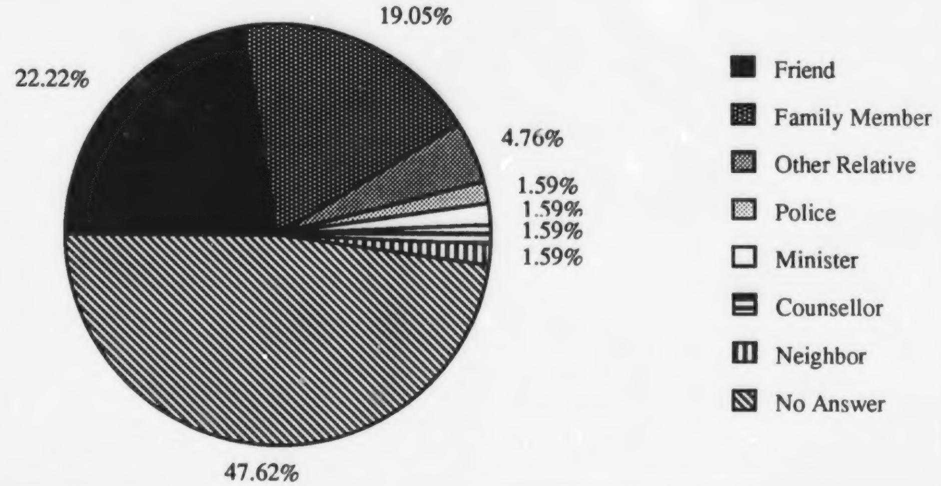
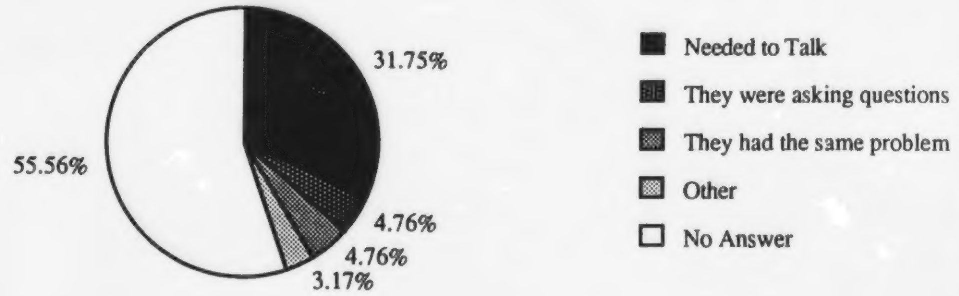


Figure 3.84: Reasons for Telling Someone Else About the Battering.



the people they talked to either were asking questions about the women's injuries or they were sympathetic to the women's situation (Figure 3.84). In terms of the responses they received from the people they talked to, one third were told to leave their batterer, 4.1 percent were told to stay with their batterers, 7.9 percent were either told to call the police or to get counselling and 3.2 percent were given no advice at all (Figure 3.85). In reference to the help the women received from the people they talked to, 22 percent of the women report that they were offered a place to stay, 12.7 percent were offered emotional and financial support or advice, and 12.7 percent were not offered any help at all (Figure 3.86).

As Figure 3.87 indicates, approximately 43 percent of the women reported that there were other people (adults) present during an incident of physical abuse by their batterer. In addition, the women identified those individuals as usually members of his family (14.3%) or his friends (12.7%). Moreover, it was found that of the people present during an attack, 25.4 percent did nothing as opposed to 15.8 percent who tried to intervene between the women and their batterers (Figure 3.88).

Finally, Figure 3.89 displays the findings concerning the outside professional help that the women consulted. Specifically, 49.2 percent said that they had contacted the police, 33 percent reported that they had talked to a lawyer, 61.9 percent contacted either a doctor or a nurse, 23.8 percent talked to their minister and 33.3 percent contacted either a psychologist or a social worker. More importantly, only 9.5 percent of the women reported that they received no assistance whatsoever, whereas approximately 67 percent

Figure 3.85: Description of the Advise Respondent Received from the Individuals that they talked to.

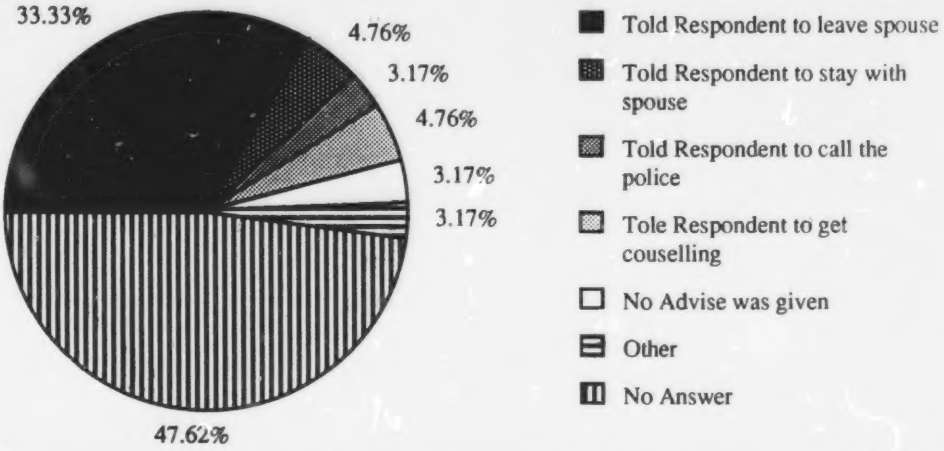


Figure 3.86: Description of the Advise Offered to Respondent by the Individuals that they talked to.

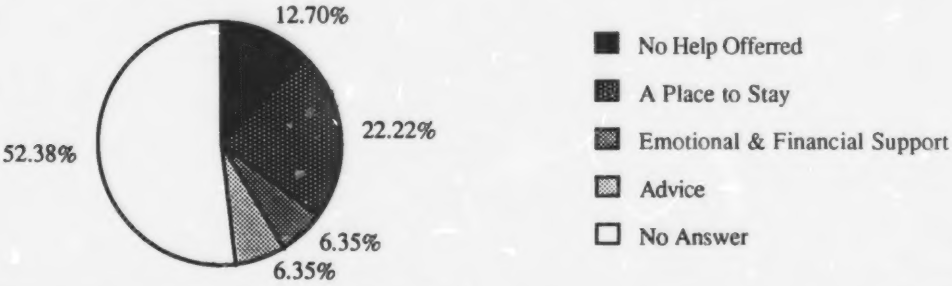


Figure 3.87: Description of Other Individuals who were Present During an Attack on the Respondent.

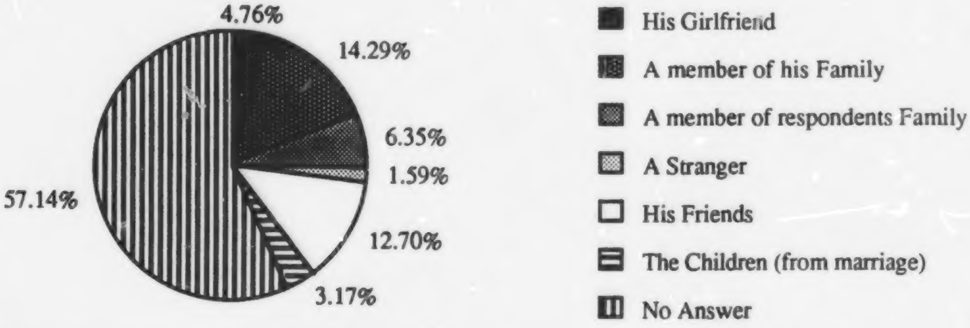


Figure 3.88: Description of What Other Individuals Tried to do when they Observed the Battering.

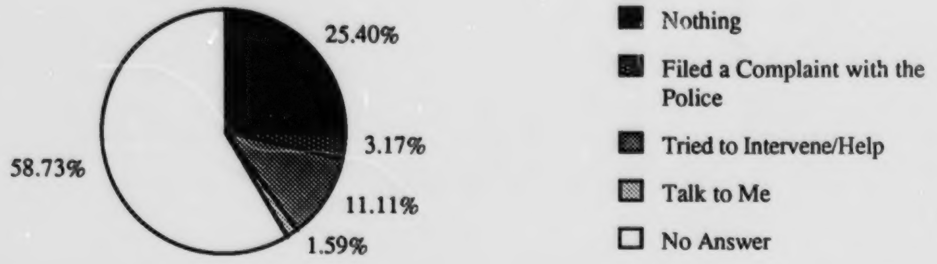


Figure 3.89: Description of the Professionals Respondent Sought for Help.

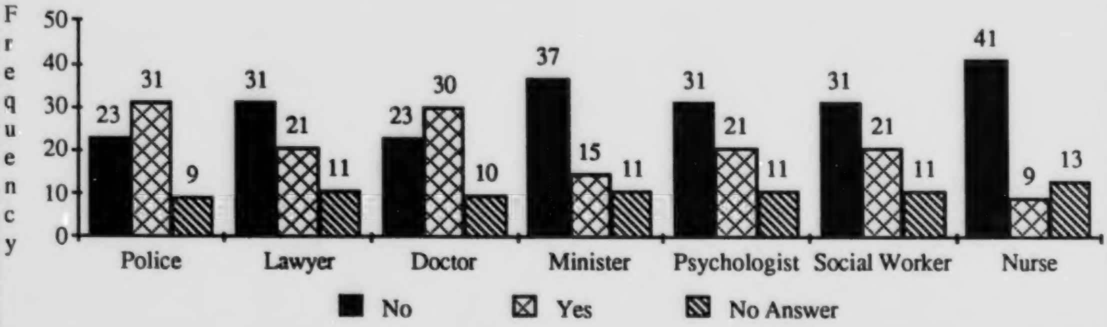
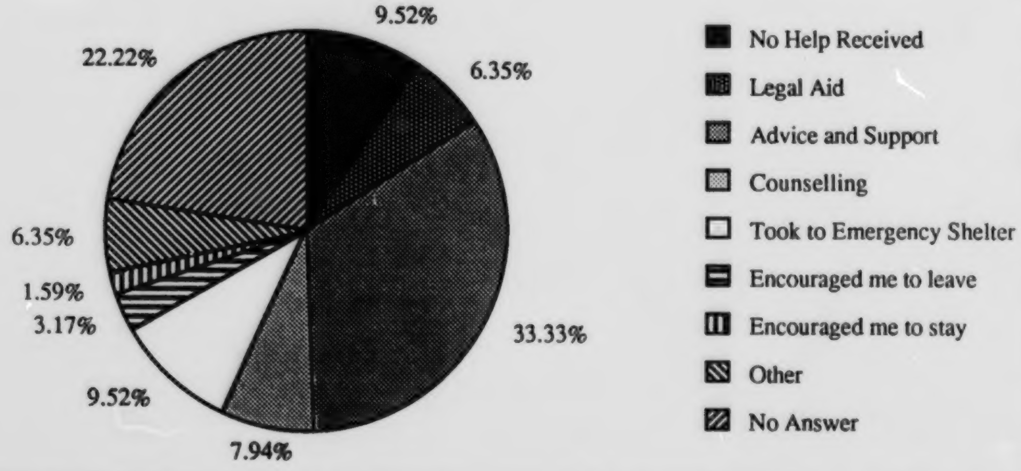


Figure 3.90: Description of Help Received From The Professionals Which Were Consulted.



reported receiving, in some measure, the following types of aid: legal aid, advice and support, counselling, and aid in getting to an emergency shelter (Figure 3.90).

3.3.5 Summary

To summarize the women's most recent battering experiences, it can be suggested that they were characterized by physical abuse; although, some sexual abuse was apparent. However, this observation should be noted with caution, given that the overall questionnaire was predominantly designed to measure the occurrence of physical abuse as opposed to verbal, psychological or sexual abuse in the battering relationship. Thus, it can be suggested that in fact, given the questionnaire design, the rates of verbal, psychological and sexual abuse have been underestimated in this sample.

In general, the women's experiences tended to be dominated by feelings of fear and terror. Reporting moderate to severe physical abuse of a duration on average from anywhere between one minute to one hour, the majority of the women in this sample indicated that they usually knew when an attack was going to occur and that they did initiate a number of coping strategies to avoid or deal with it. The major coping strategies for these women included: (1) Leaving or avoiding their batterer; (2) Calling the police; and (3) Trying to talk to or calm their batterer down. Overall, it would seem that the women's most recent experiences were characterized by increasing abuse and severity of abuse and a continual deterioration of the relationship with the women leaving their batterers anywhere between one and five times before resolving to find a more permanent solution to the problem. In general, the women tended to first seek out help from family and friends, with the majority of these people advising them to leave. When eventually they made the decision to leave on a more permanent basis, the women tended to do one or more of the following: (1) Move to an emergency shelter or the Y.W.C.A.; (2) Find their own place; or (3) Move into Discovery House.

3.4 The Women's and Their Batterers' General Condition of Health

Figure 3.91 describes the women's and their batterer's general health condition upon their arrival at Discovery House. As can be observed, over 60 percent of the women reported that their general condition of health was average to poor upon arriving at Discovery House. By comparison, 52 percent of the women reported that their batterer's general health condition ranged from average to poor. Most notably, the women suffered from nerves, stress and fatigue upon their admission to Discovery House. However, the majority of women studied here suggested that their condition of health was the direct result of an actual medical or physical condition (see Figures 3.92 and 3.93).

3.4.1 Chemical Abuse by Their Batterers

The major explanations that the women offered about their batterer's average to poor health included: an actual physical or medical condition (19%) and an alcohol problem (17.5%). More importantly, as Figure 3.94 indicates, almost 45 percent of the women in general thought that there was a direct connection between their batterer's use of alcohol and the battering they received. The women

Figure 3.91: Description of Respondent's and Their Spouse General Condition of Health.

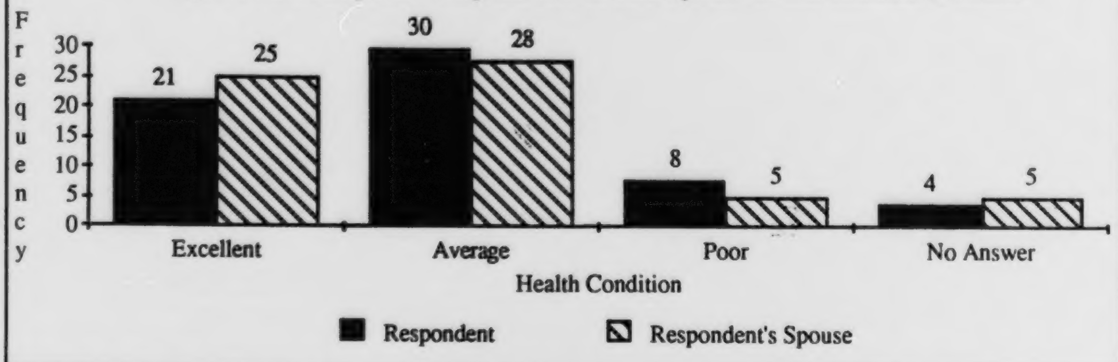


Figure 3.92: Reasons for Poor Condition of Health, Respondents and Batterers.

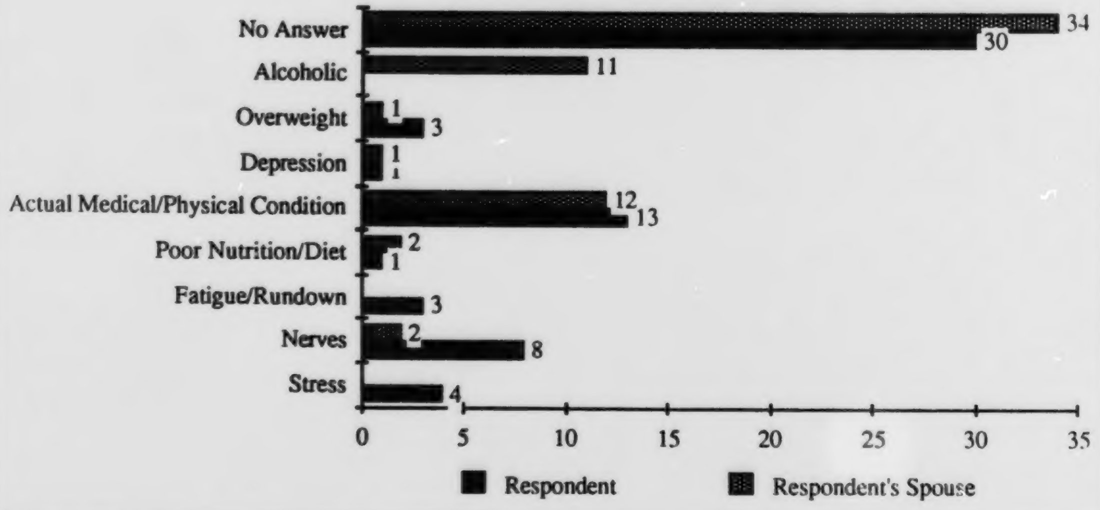


Figure 3.93: Description of Actual Medical Condition Requiring Treatment (Respondents Only).

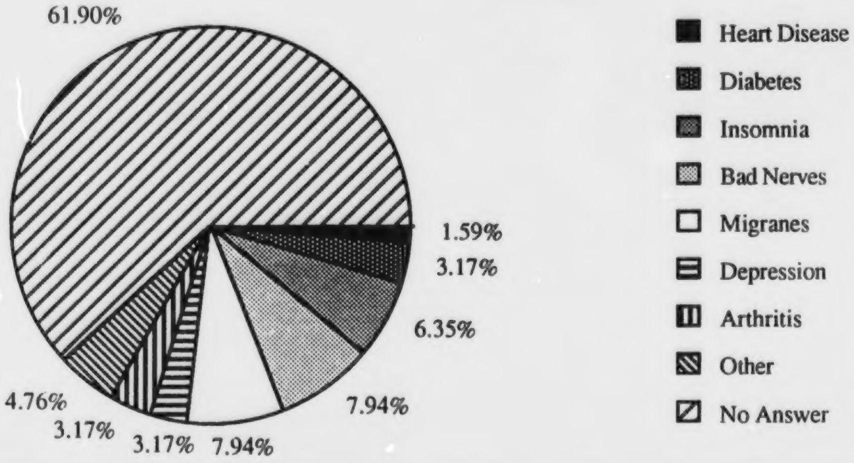


Figure 3.94: Description of Whether or Not Respondent Thought There Was a Connection Between Spouses Use of Alcohol/Drugs and Battering.

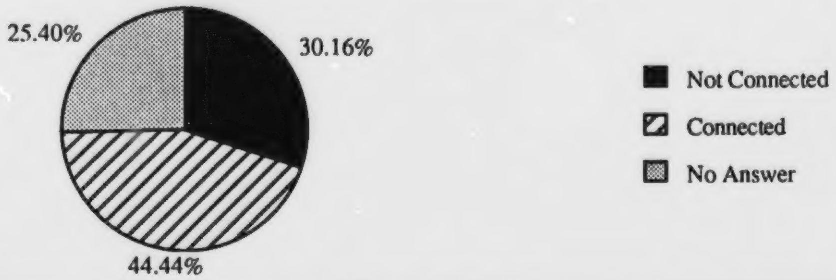


Figure 3.95: Respondent's Reasons For Thinking There Was a Connection Between Abuse and Their Spouses Substance Abuse.

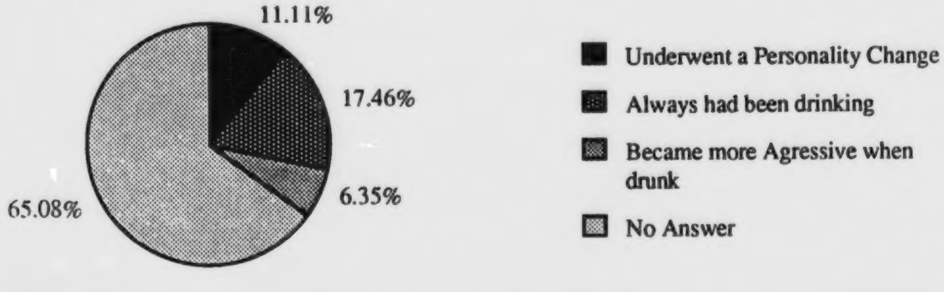


Figure 3.96: Frequency of Spouses Use of Drugs.

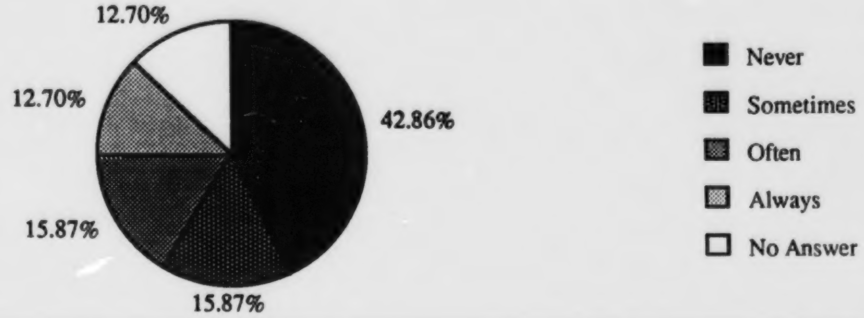


Figure 3.97: Frequency of Alcohol Use By Respondents and Their Spouses.

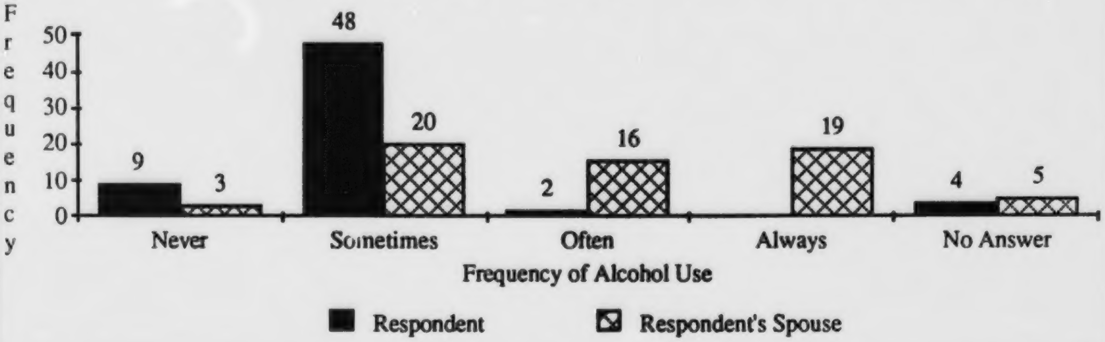
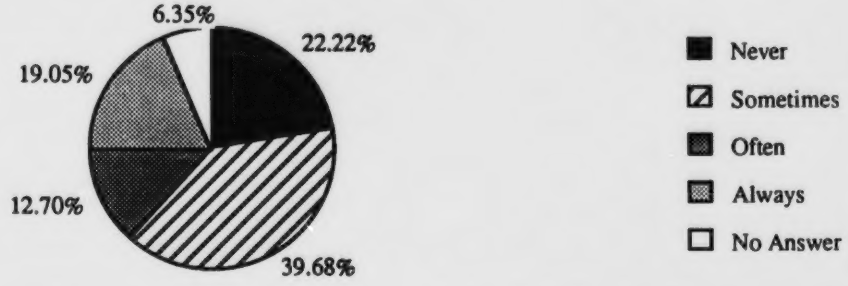


Figure 3.98: Frequency of Spouse Being Under The Influence of Alcohol During an Attack on Respondent.



proposed that their batterer's behavior changed and that their batterers became more aggressive when under the influence of alcohol (Figure 3.95). Furthermore, and more importantly, the majority of the women suggested that they were always abused when their batterers had been drinking.

As Figure 3.96 indicates, approximately 45 percent of the women suggested that their batterers used drugs sometimes (15.8%); often (15.8%), or always (12.7%). In terms of the frequency of alcohol use, Figure 3.97 presents a comparison of the women's and their batterer's use of alcohol. As can be seen, while 76 percent of the women reported using alcohol on an occasional basis, only 3 percent said that they drank often. On the other hand, 56 percent of the women reported that their batterers drank often (25%) or all the time (30%). Finally, in terms of the women's suggestion that their batterers use of alcohol was connected with their battering, over 70 percent of the women report that their batterers were under the influence of alcohol sometimes (50%), often (13%) and always (19%) during an attack (Figure 3.98). Thirty-five percent of the women reported the presence and use of drugs as concurrent with an attack: sometimes (17%), often (3%) and always (1.5%) (Figure 3.99).

As the literature has frequently noted (Walker, 1984; Sample Survey and Data Bank Units, University of Regina, 1984), it is clear that the presence of alcohol use and abuse in the battering relationship is directly related to the women's experiences in terms of the abuse received. More importantly, while this connection does appear to be empirically substantiated, an overwhelming proportion of the women have, at least subjectively, drawn a connection between

Figure 3.99: Frequency of Spouse Being Under The Influence of Drugs During an Attack on Respondent.

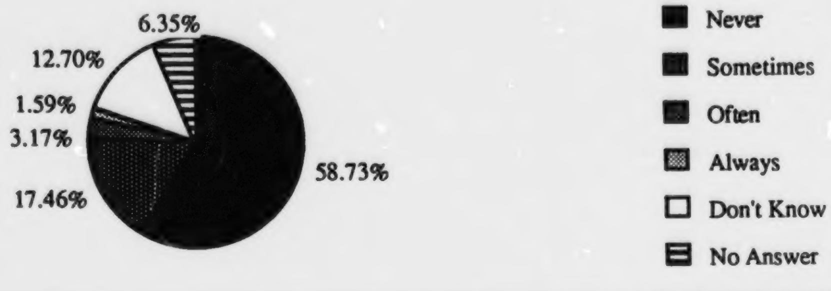


Figure 3.100: Number of Children the Respondents Had.

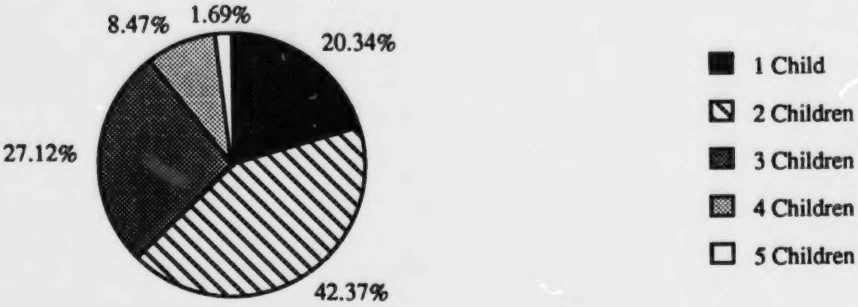


Figure 3.101: Children Currently Living with Respondent by Birth Order.

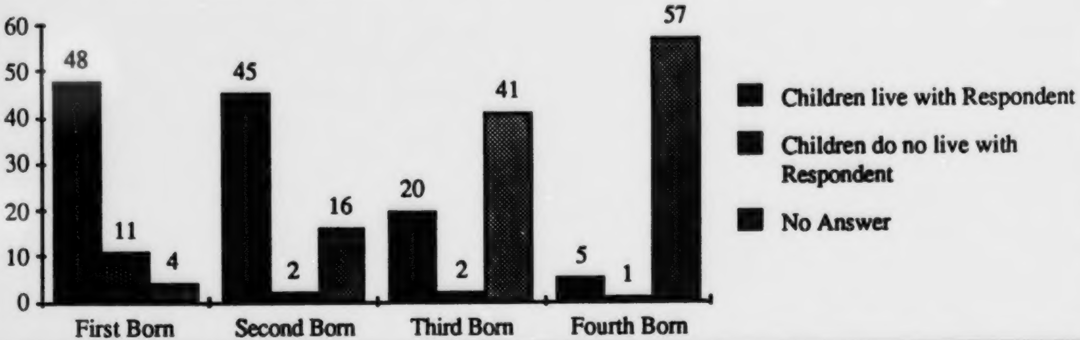


Figure 3.102: Grouped Ages of Children by Birth Order.

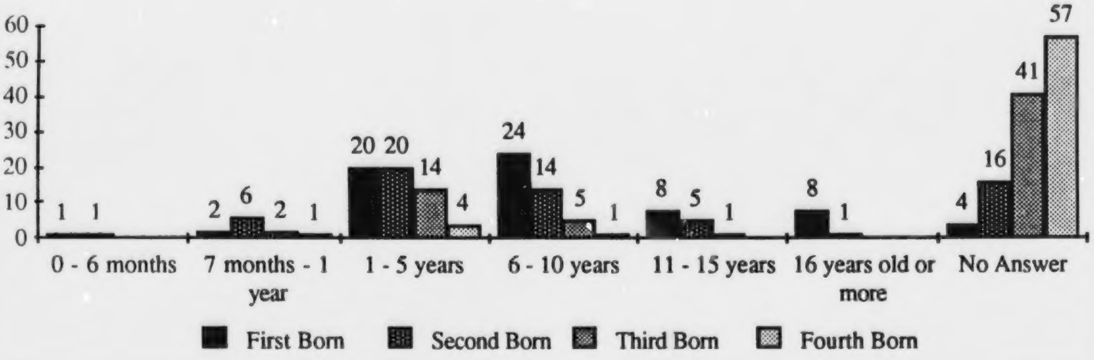


Figure 3.103: Sex of The Children by Birth Order.

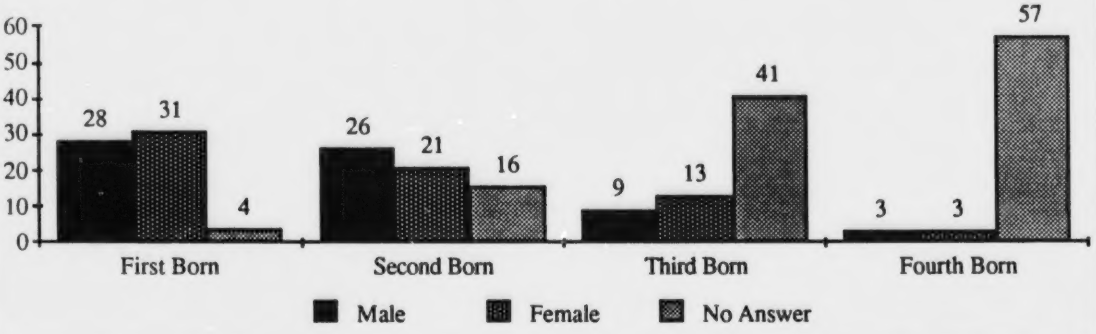


Figure 3.104: Percentage of Respondents who Report that Their Children Were Present During Battering.

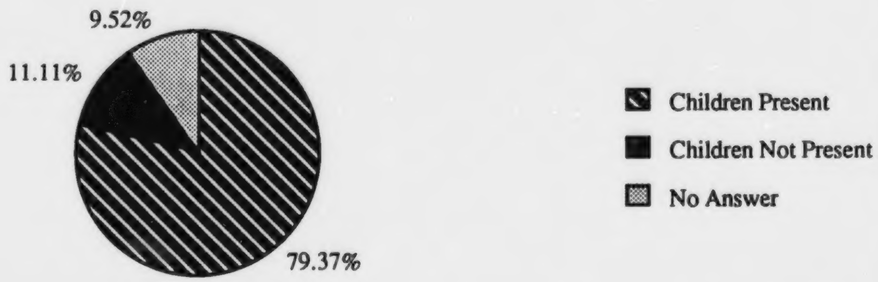


Figure 3.105: Percentage of Respondents Reporting That Their Children Were Hurt (Physically) During Their Own Battering.

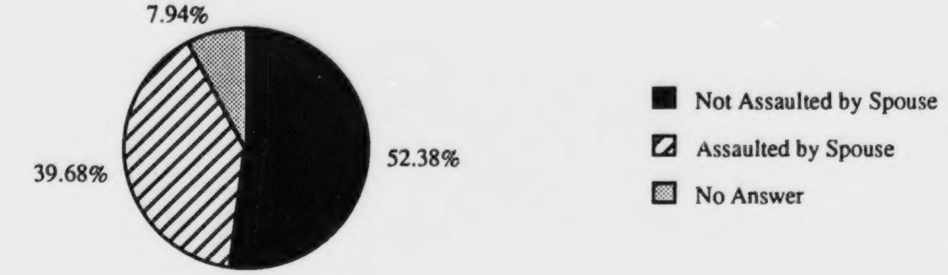


Figure 3.106: Severity of the Assault on the Children.

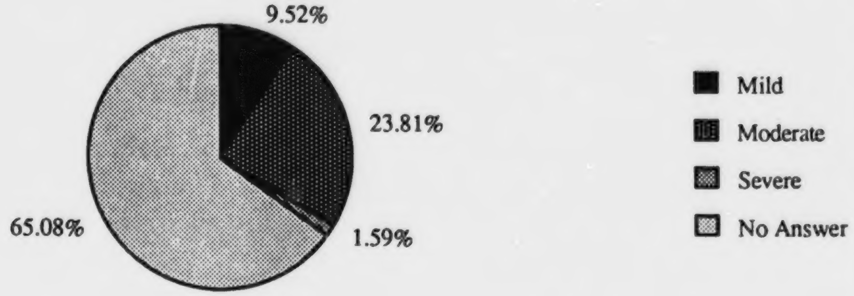
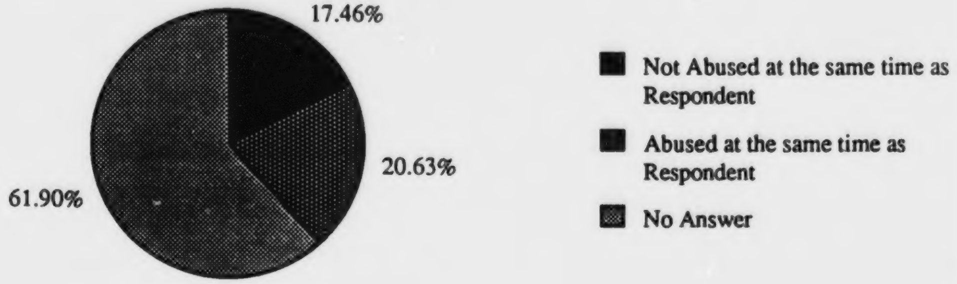


Figure 3.107: Children's Attack in Relation The Women's Assault.



their batterer's use of alcohol and drugs and the battering they received.

3.5 The Children and the Battering Relationship

Of the women participating in the study, 20 percent had one child, 42 percent had two, 27 percent had three, 8.5 percent had four and 1.7 percent had five children living with them at Discovery House (see Figures 3.100 and 3.101). The average age range of the children was between one month to sixteen years old but the majority of the children fell within the six to ten years of age, age group. As would be expected, there were more female children than male children (Figures 3.102 and 3.103).

3.5.1 Children and Abuse

While almost 80 percent of the women reported that all or some of her children were present during the battering (Figure 3.104), over 50 percent said that their children were not harmed during that time (Figure 3.105). However, an overwhelming 40 percent reported that at least one of their children had been hurt during their batterers attack on them. Of the women who reported that their children had been physically harmed during a battering episode, 10 percent said that the children were hurt only slightly, 25 percent suggested that the harm was only moderate and less than 2 percent had reported that their children were severely hurt during a battering episode (Figure 3.106).

In addition, approximately 18 percent of the women reported that their children were not abused at the same time that their own abuse

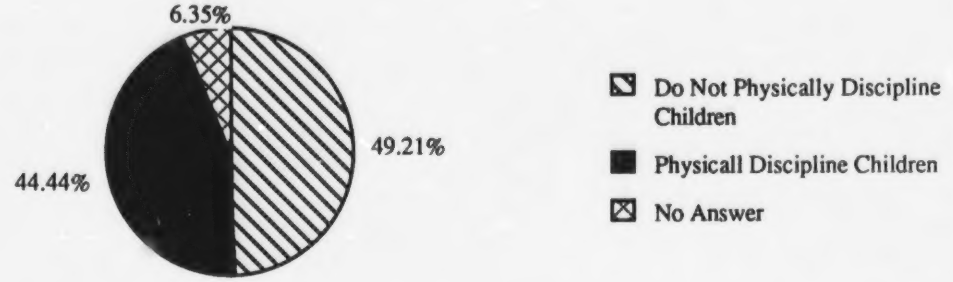


Figure 3.108: Percentage of Respondent's Who Physically Discipline Their Children.

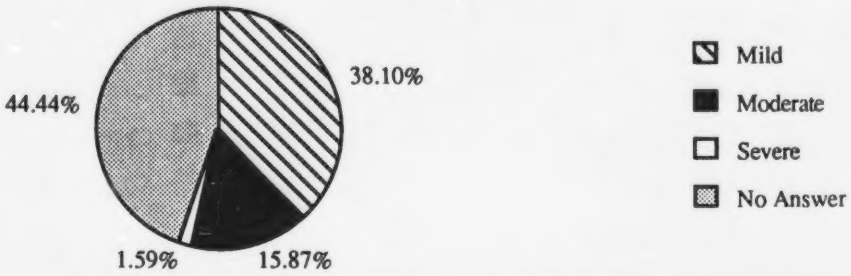


Figure 3.109: Severity of The Physical Discipline That Respondent's Have Used on Their Children.

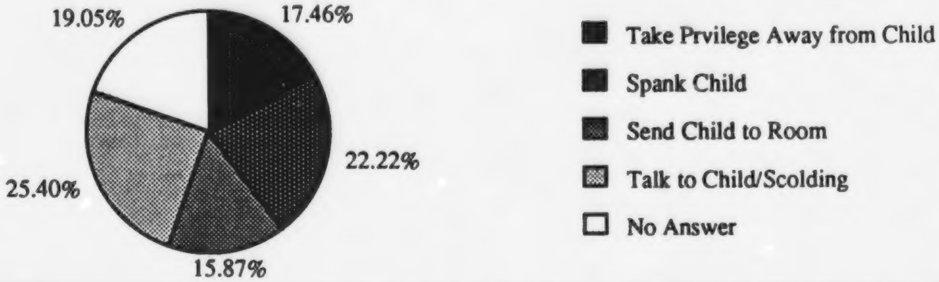


Figure 3.110: Description of The Way in Which Respondent's Usually Discipline Their Children.

Figure 3.111: Percentage of Respondents Reporting That They Have Been Struck By One or More of Their Children.

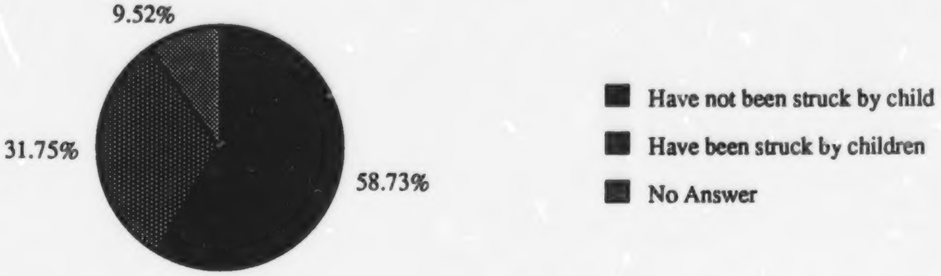


Figure 3.112: Reasons Cited for the Childs Agression.

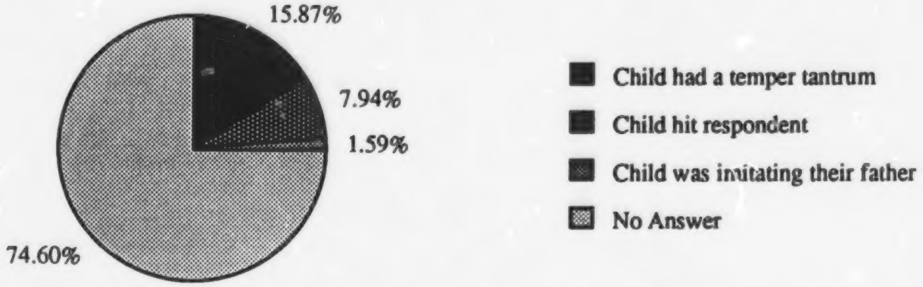
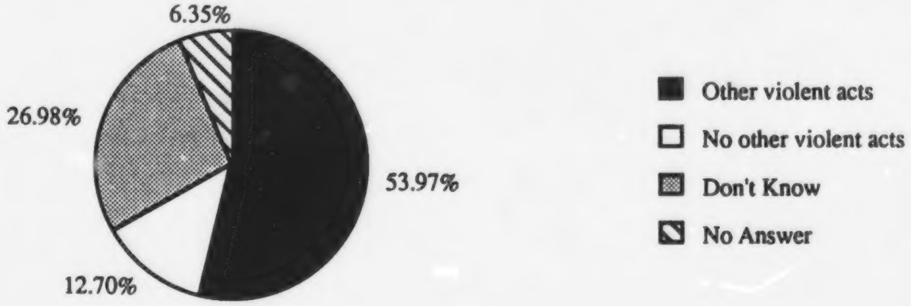


Figure 3.113: Description of Spouses Violent Acts Towards Other People.



occurred, rather the women suggested that their children had been abused at different times than themselves (Figure 3.107).

Approximately 50 percent of the women stated that they did not physically punish their children whereas 44 percent reported that they did (Figure 3.108). Thirty-eight percent of the respondents in the discipline group said that, while they did physically discipline their children they only did so mildly. Sixteen percent reported that they used moderate discipline on their children. Only one person (1.6%) said that they severely disciplined their children (Figure 3.109). However, for the most part, the women reported that they generally used "non-violent" types of discipline. The ways in which the women disciplined their children, as Figure 3.110 shows, included: (a) taking away a privilege (17.5%); (b) sending their child to their room (15.9%); (c) talking to the child or scolding them (25.4%); and (d) spanking them (22.2%).

On a different note, roughly 59 percent of the women reported that they had been struck by one or more of their children (Figure 3.111). Despite this, the majority of the women suggested that the time the children were "acting out," or were having a temper tantrum (Figure 3.112).

3.5.2 Summary

To briefly summarize, it is apparent that the children in these families did witness, and at times actually experienced, the violence between their parents. In addition, approximately half the women in this study have reported that their children were harmed, usually physically--but not seriously, during an outburst of violence between their parents. Furthermore, while the non-response rate to the item concerning the abuse of the children was high, roughly one-fifth of the sample reported that their children were abused outside of the violence occurring between their parents. Given the sensitivity of the question, we did not expect a high response rate and hence, suspect that the final findings on this particular issue were underestimated. Lastly, while the women reported that they do physically discipline their children, these findings do not suggest that they lie outside the range of discipline found in other families.

3.6 An Overview of the Batterers Previous History of Violence

When asked whether or not their batterers had a history of violence apart from their relationship with themselves, approximately 54 percent of the women reported that their batterers had committed violent acts towards other people (Figure 3.113). Most prominently, 29 percent of the women reported that their batterers had physically assaulted another person (Figure 3.114). Other responses to this item included: throwing or breaking objects (4.8%); sexual assault (3.2%); verbal abuse (1.6%); and 11 percent of the women witnessed their batterer perform some type of cruelty on animals (i.e., kicking, beating with a stick, etc.).

While 23 percent of the women included in this sample had been previously married, 27 percent reported that their batterers had been married before (Figure 3.115). Furthermore, approximately 35 percent said that their batterer's marriages had ended in divorce or in a separation (Figure 3.116). Moreover, as Figure 3.117 indicates, 92

Figure 3.114: Spouses Violence Towards Other People or Things.

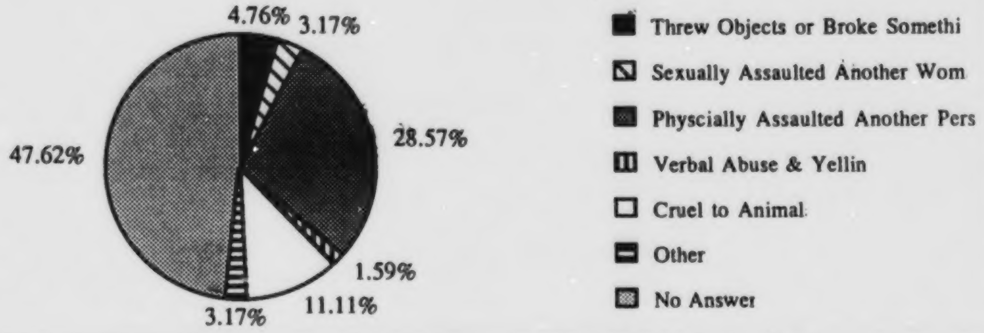


Figure 3.115: Previous Marital Status of Respondents and Their Spouses.

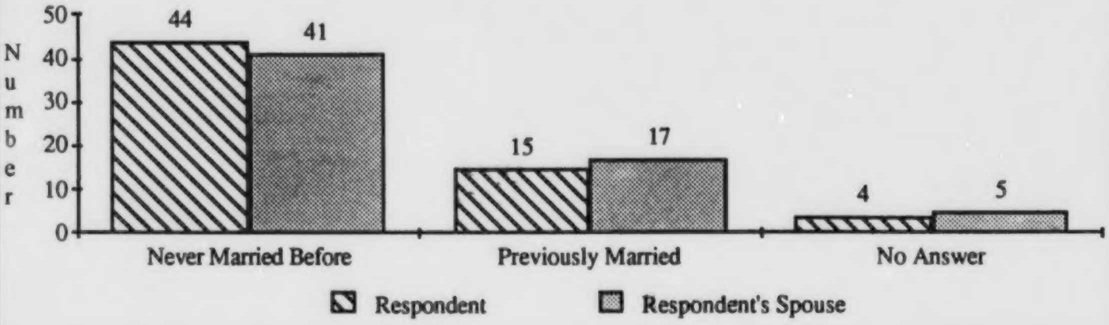


Figure 3.116: How Batterers Previous Marriage Ended.

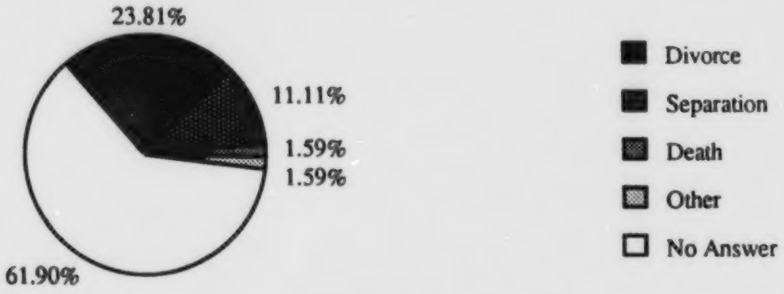


Figure 3.117: Occurence of Violence in Spouses previous Relationships (N=12).

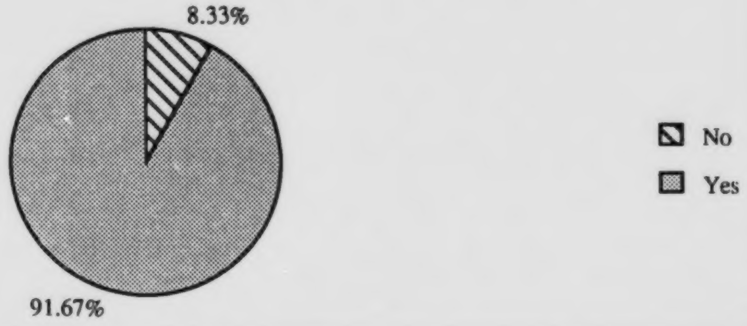


Figure 3.118: Was Spouse Ever Arrested on Any Other Charges, Apart from Assaulting Respondent.

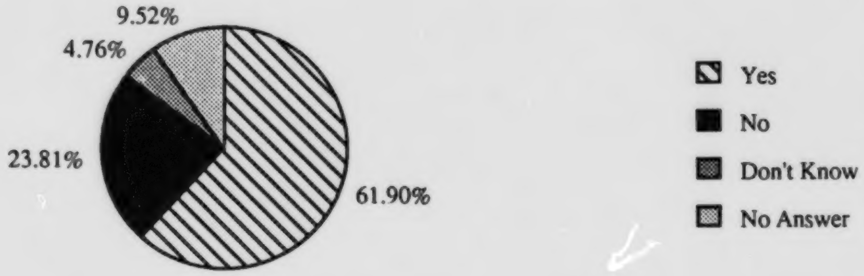


Figure 3.119: Charges that Respondent's Spouses were Arrested on.

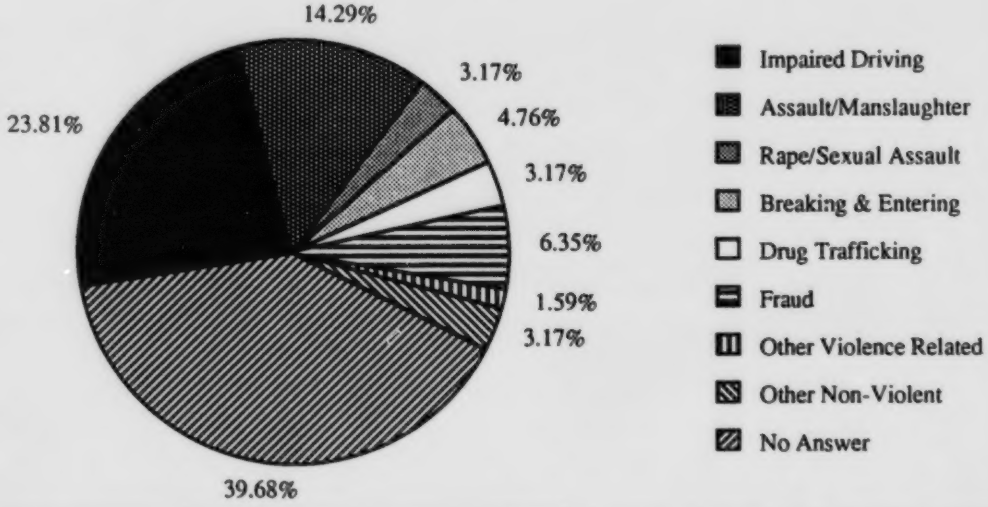
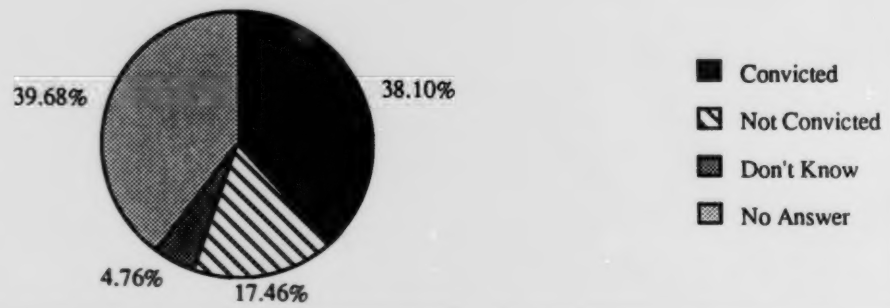


Figure 3.120: Description of Whether or Not Spouse Was Convicted.



percent of the women reported that their batterer's previous marriages were also fraught with violence and abuse.

Finally, over 60 percent of the women reported that their batterers had been previously arrested on other charges apart from their own assault (Figure 3.118). While the women described a wide range of charges that their batterers had been arrested on, as Figure 3.119 suggests, the most pronounced of these were impaired driving (23.8%) and assault causing bodily harm (14.3%). Moreover, while 17.5 percent reported that their batterers were not convicted or that the charges were dropped, 30 percent said that they were convicted and usually received a suspended sentence or probation (Figure 3.120).

Thus, it can be concluded that the women's batterers do have a prolonged history of violence, both inside their families and outside (Walker, 1984; Pagelow, 1981; Sample Survey and Data Bank Unit, University of Regina, 1984).

3.7 Conclusions

The foregoing statistical description in no way captures the human suffering that the women in our sample endured. What it does do, however, is lay the groundwork for an understanding of the women's experiences in the following chapters.

The profile of the women who entered Discovery House was, overall, diverse. They represented a broad group in terms of age, ethnicity, religion and education. At the time of their entrance to Discovery House, three quarters of the women were not employed although 86 percent of them had worked at least once in the previous 12 years. Of those who did work, they were slightly better educated than their batterers yet they generally received lower incomes, earning between $7,201 and $10,800 per year. Their batterers were usually employed (78%) and were more likely to be earning between $10,800 and $18,000 per year.

Generally, the figures suggest that the women were not very dissimilar from other Canadian women. They were representative of the Canadian female population in terms of ethnicity and religion (Statistics Canada, 1983, 1984). Like other Canadian women, they appeared to move in and out of the labour force, they were concentrated in a small number of industries and occupations and they received low salaries (Armstrong and Armstrong, 1978). As we will see in Chapter IV, these economic conditions (the usual ones facing most Canadian women) continued to plague the women long after they left the House.

The women were most likely to be separated from their batterers rather than divorced when they came to the House. Of those women who were married or lived common-law, the average length of the relationship was approximately seven years. Twenty-three percent of the women had been previously married while 27 percent of their batterers had had a previous marriage. One of the purposes of second-stage housing has been to allow women enough time to think through and decide whether or not they will seek a divorce. For this sample, it was clear that they had not yet made this choice, and as the study unfolded, it became evident that this was an important decision which influenced how programs were utilized.

The family histories of the women indicated that 32 percent of the women had witnessed some form of violence between their parents and that 35 percent of the women had been violently treated by their family members, ex-boyfriends or ex-husbands. Approximately 40 percent of their batterers had previously battered members of their family of origin.

The majority of the women in the study, reported that they had most frequently been physically abused (71 percent) followed by psychological abuse (18 percent) and sexual abuse (3 percent). Despite these comments the women noted in another question that 41 percent of them had been sexually abused. Almost 35 percent of the women had been abused at least once a week and 60 percent of them reported that the abuse was moderate to severe. Seventy-one percent of the women reported that their batterers did not use a weapon during an attack but over half of these women were threatened with a weapon. Twenty-one percent of the women reported that their batterers did use a weapon. We did not doubt the feelings of terror and fear the majority of the women reported.

That 72 percent of the women had left their batterers previously and that the majority had left on average five times, indicated to us that the women had long been trying to resolve their situations. They usually went back to their batterers because they were pregnant, they were broke, they had no place to go, they were lonely or their batterer promised to change. In light of the severity and extent of the abuse they suffered, their concomitant terror and fear, and the fact that they were having difficulty making it on their own, strongly indicated to us their need for second-stage housing.

Eighty percent of the women reported that all or some of their children were present during a battering episode and 40 percent of the women reported that at least one child had been hurt at the time. Eighteen percent of the children had been abused at different times than themselves. These figures helped to later explain why the women were so very concerned about their children and why they felt their children required counselling.

There was little doubt from the women's reports that their batterers had a history of violence. Over 50 percent of their batterers had committed violent acts towards other people or animals, 60 percent had been previously arrested, usually for impaired driving and assault causing bodily harm (not against the women) and 92 percent reportedly battered their previous partners. The women also believed very strongly that alcohol and their abuse was related. These characteristics of the batterers proved to be a continual source of aggravation for the women throughout the study, both for themselves and their children.

In summary, this comprehensive picture of the women suggested to us that they could not be distinguished from the main stream of the Canadian population in terms of their demographic composition. The women were ordinary people except for the fact that they were cruelly abused. They were economically strapped, they feared for themselves and their children and they had tried on numerous occasions to extricate themselves from their abusive situation. These themes tended to continually surface throughout the women's interviews. With some familiarity with what they had to cope with, we now turn to their own explanations of their experiences.

CHAPTER IV: THE WOMEN'S VIEW OF DISCOVERY HOUSE

4.0 Introduction

The following results were obtained from the semi-structured interviews administered to the women at the time of their admission, midway through their stay, the day they left and six months later. We discuss each time point separately and in the conclusion of each section identify major themes.

4.1 The Women's Perceptions at the Time of Admission

Sixty-seven women were interviewed within one week of their arrival at Discovery House. Our interview schedule attempted to ascertain under what conditions the women arrived at Discovery House, what the process was like and what their needs were.

4.1.1 Why the Women Went to Discovery House

Figure 4.1a indicates that the majority of the women became aware of Discovery House through the emergency shelters (65.66%), followed by various community services (17.91%), and the media (7.45%). Social services and the hospitals were the key community agencies in helping the women become aware of Discovery House, while the brochures and bus posters prepared and distributed by the House served to inform some of the women (Figures 4.1b, 4.1c). Family and friends were about as useful as the advertising of the House (Figure 4.1a), but friends appeared to be more aware than families (Figure 4.1d).

Figure 4.1a: Awareness of Shelter.

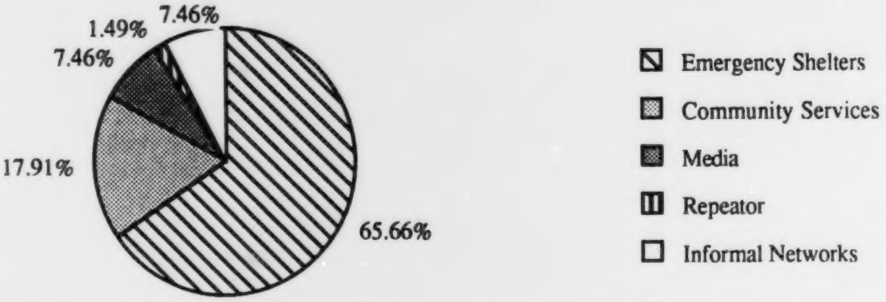


Figure 4.1b: Awareness of Shelter - Community Services.

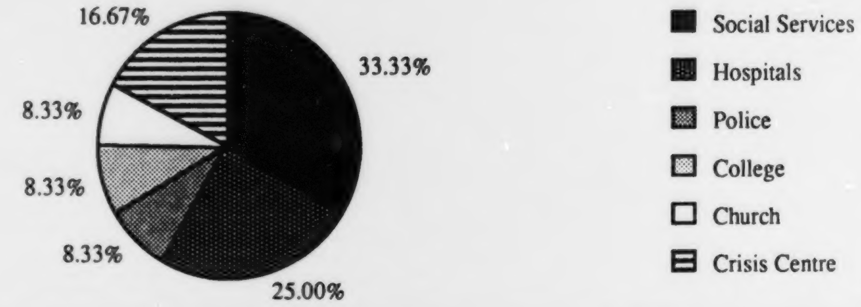


Figure 4.1c: Awareness of Shelter via The Media.

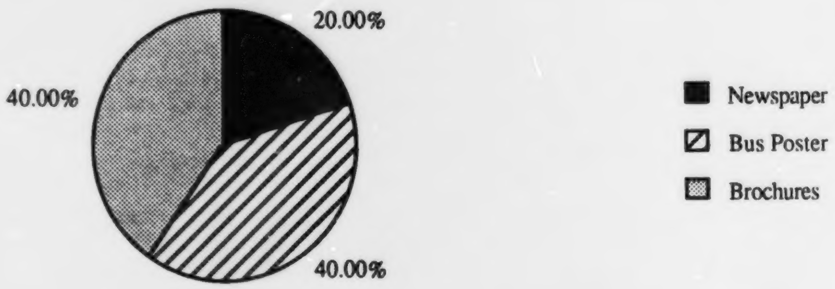


Figure 4.1d: Awareness of Shelter via Informal Networks.

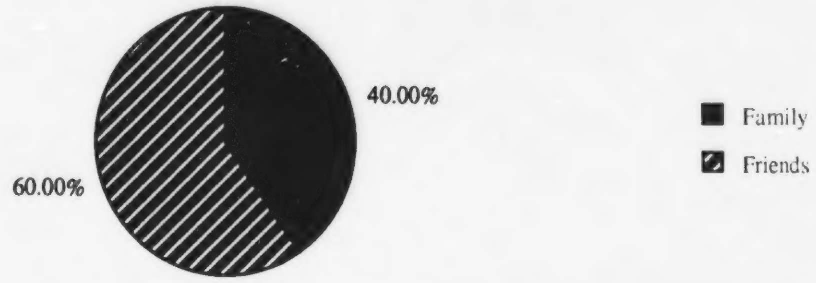


Figure 4.2: Reasons for Going to Discovery House.

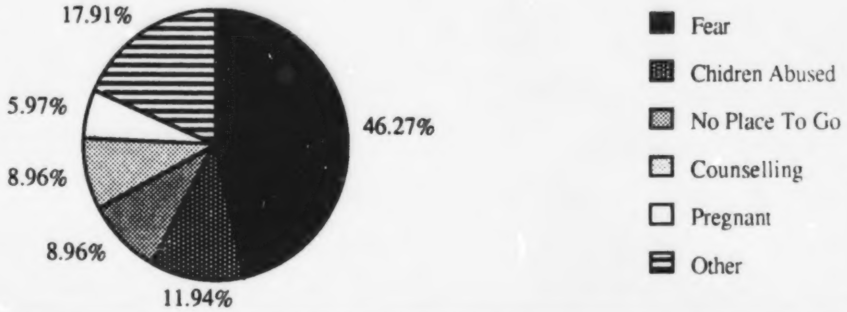
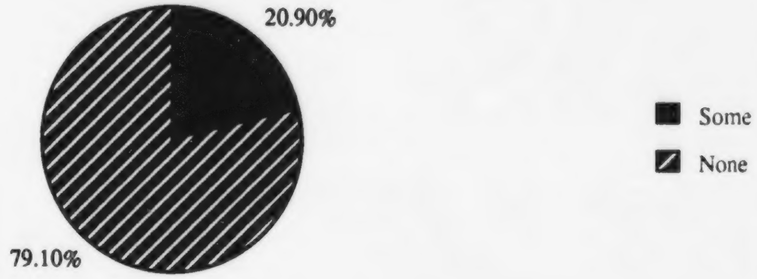


Figure 4.3: Alternatives Available to the Women.



As can be seen in Figure 4.2, 46.27 percent of the battered women went to Discovery House because they were afraid of their batterer's and required security. Over half of these women stated in one way or another they were in fear of losing their lives. As one woman stated, if she had not come to Discovery House, we could locate her "...at the local cemetery." The other half of these women had tried it on their own at one point in time and felt that they could not survive. If they went with family or friends, these people were in danger, if they lived on their own, the batterer would break into their home, harass them at work, or threaten to abduct the children (one father did).

The next most important reason for going to Discovery House was that their children were also being abused and this was totally unacceptable to them (11.94%). Five of the eight women who came because of child abuse, had discovered during their stay at emergency shelters that their children had been sexually abused. This was extremely upsetting to the women and provided a strong incentive to move onto second stage housing. One of these women suggested that she had to go to Discovery House or she "...would murder her husband...." The other three women felt that if they went to Discovery House, their children would receive the counselling that they believed was required as a result of the abuse.

Approximately 9 percent of the women went to the House simply because they had no place to go and their time was up at the emergency shelter. They had no money and no place to live. Approximately 9 percent of the women felt that they required further counselling and thought the program at Discovery House would help them meet this need. Three of the women were pregnant and one woman had just had a baby (five days prior to her move to Discovery House). The pregnant women felt that they really needed time to "think things through." Part of this thinking was related to the question of abortion or giving up the child for adoption. The woman with the new baby needed a place to live and some support.

The other reasons women went to Discovery House were varied. Two women stated they they were threatened that if they did not go, their children would be apprehended by Child Welfare. One women said she went in order to escape the pressure placed upon her by a religious group in her community who believed women should not leave their husbands under any circumstances. Five women decided that they "needed a longer rest" from the battering, one went because it was convenient, one saw it as a route to get back to school and two women saw it as the only way they could prevent themselves from "weakening" and returning home.

It seemed to us that the majority of women were moving to second stage housing out of urgent and very immediate needs. That is, we had the sense that the women were still in a state of crisis. In particular, the fear the women experienced was very real.

Figure 4.3 supported this observation. Seventy-nine percent of the women believed that they had no real choice about where they would go short of returning to their batterers. Discovery House seemed to be the only alternative that they could think of at the time. The women who felt they had choices stated that they could go to another complex that was somewhat similar to a second stage shelter (Horizon West) but they did not feel that it was as secure as Discovery House.

4.1.2 Where the Women Came From

Clearly, Discovery House was functioning as a second stage shelter. Women were passing through the emergency shelters before they came to the House. Figure 4.4 indicates that 88 percent of the women came directly from an emergency shelter. Two of these shelters were in the immediate city and the rest were out of town shelters.

Six of the women came directly from home. These women did not view their situations as an emergency because their batterers were away for long time periods. All of these women did not want to go to an emergency shelter because they did not want to move twice. The woman from the YWCA gave the same reason. The woman from the hospital felt she really had no place to go and was not well enough to withstand the rigors of an emergency shelter.

The emergency shelters were cited by 68.66 percent of the women as being the most helpful in gaining admission to Discovery House (see Figure 4.5a). About 12 percent of the women felt Discovery House was helpful, about 4 percent thought their family was helpful, and 3 percent stated that community agencies were useful. Approximately 12 percent felt that no one helped them at all.

When asked who was the least helpful, only seventeen of the women mentioned someone. Surprisingly, almost 15 percent of these women noted that the women at the emergency shelters discouraged them because Discovery House was like a "prison," a "jail," a "mental

Figure 4.4: Type of Living Accomodation the Women Came From.

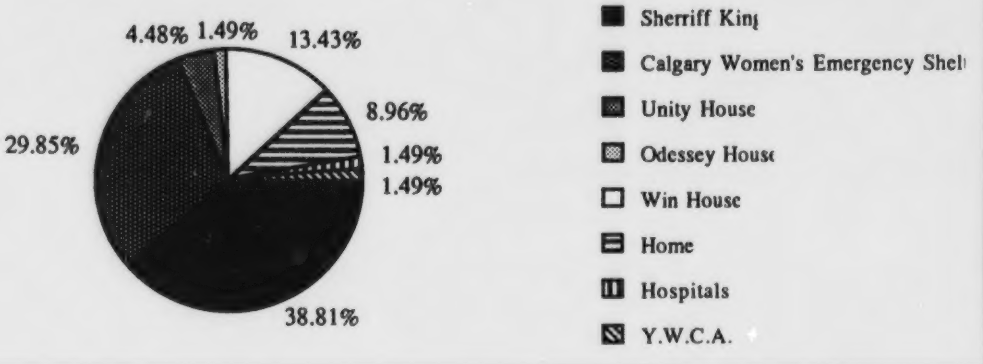


Figure 4.5a: Description of Who was Most Helpful in Aiding the Women to Gain Admission to Discovery House.

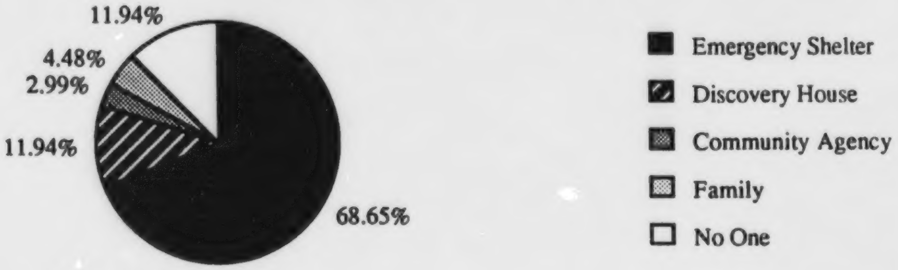
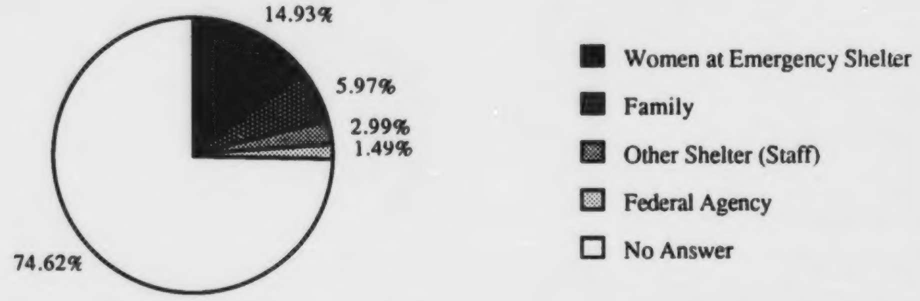


Figure 4.5b: Description of Who was Least Helpful in Aiding the Women to Gain Admission to Discovery House.



hospital," "girls boarding school" and the like (Figure 4.5b). About 3 percent of the emergency shelter staff discouraged the women for similar reasons. Approximately 6 percent of family members tried to prevent the move and one federal agency tried to stop the move mainly because they did not understand the purpose of Discovery House.

4.1.3 The Screening Interview

The comments from the women about their screening interview (whether they qualified for admission) suggested that this was an arduous and stressful task. Forty-two percent of the women said they were scared or terrified during the interview (Figure 4.6). Approximately half of these women said they were terrified that they would not get into the shelter. Typical comments such as "...I prayed to God throughout the interview..."; or "...I would have told them anything they wanted to hear just to get in..."; or "If I could have bribed them I would have..." indicated the desperation of the women. To a lesser extent, the women were frightened that they could not possibly live up to all the program expectations while several of the women were panicky about how they would pay the rent.

About 18 percent of the women only remembered that they had to re-tell their story yet again. Basically these women stated that they were weary of rehashing the past for all and sundry. Besides being depressing, it was also demeaning. A representative comment by one woman was, "There must be some other distinguishing feature about me besides the fact I was hit by my husband."

Figure 4.6: Feelings at Screening Interview.

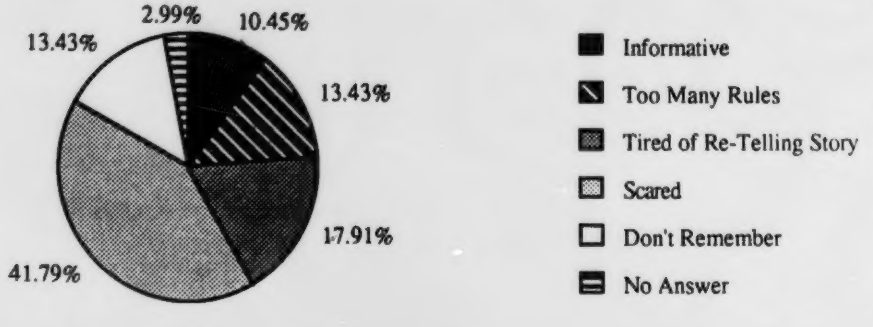


Figure 4.7: Average Waiting Period (in days) to Gain Admission to Discovery House.

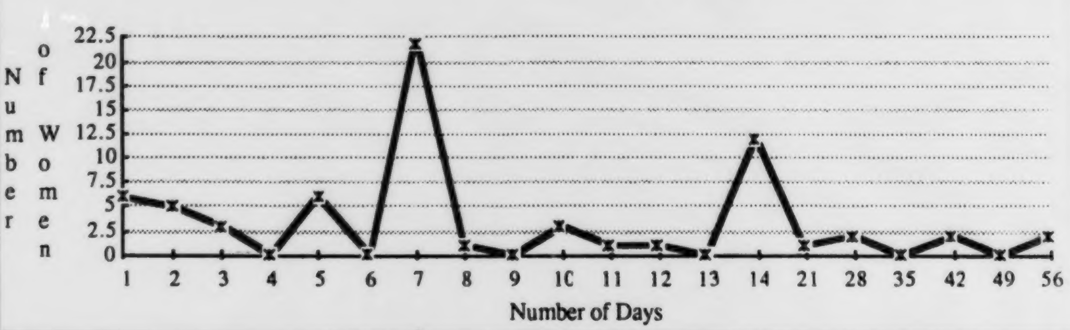
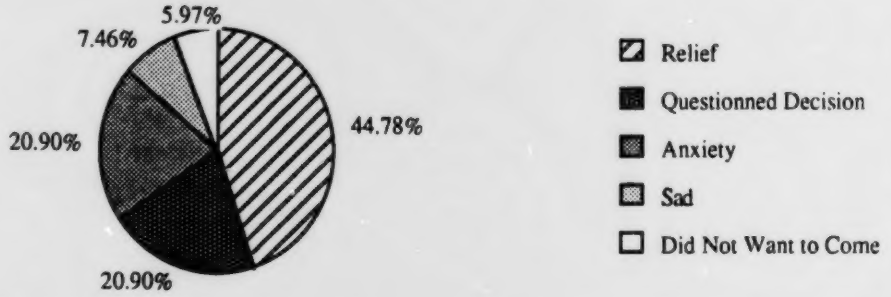


Figure 4.8: The Women's Thoughts At The Time of Their Acceptance into Discovery House.



Thirteen percent of the women stated that they remembered nothing of the interview and 13 percent said all they remembered was that there were too many rules and there was nothing they could do about them because they needed a place to go. Ten percent of the women found the screening interview to be very informative.

The women were not immediately informed of their acceptance. The waiting period, which seemed to be about 7 days, was one of anxiety (Figure 4.7). When the women knew they were accepted, almost half (43%) were greatly relieved (Figure 4.8). Words like "ecstatic," "overjoyed," and "sheer relief" are indicative of their feelings. About 21 percent of the women then wondered if they had made the right decision. This was a "big step" on the road to leaving their batterers. Seven percent of the women noted that they felt very sad - they did not want to leave their friends and counsellors at the emergency shelters. Six percent of the women flat out did not want to come.

Also at this time, the women (71.65%) reported that they were very worried about their children (Figure 4.9). The majority were concerned about moving their children again, and 15 percent of the women were very worried about the day care at Discovery House. Either their children had never been in day care and they were worried how they would react or they were concerned about new staff and new programs which were different from the emergency shelters. Twelve percent of the women were very worried about exposing their children to other children who they assumed to have severe behavior problems.

Figure 4.9: Concerns The Women Had About Their Children.

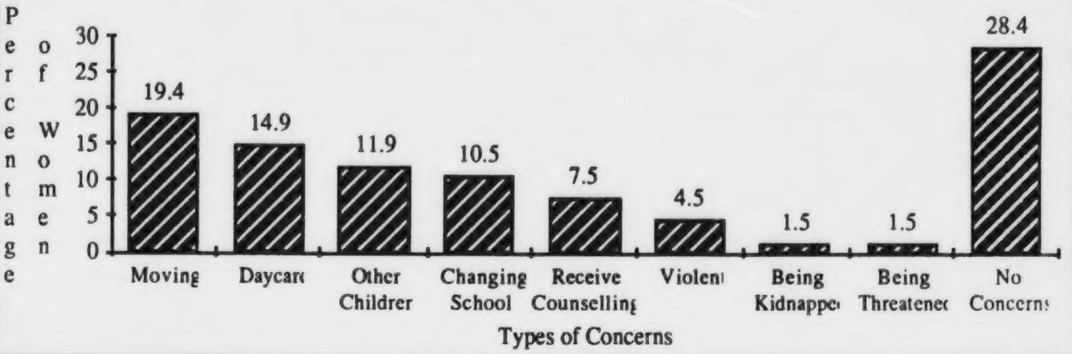


Figure 4.10: The Possessions that the Women Left Home With.

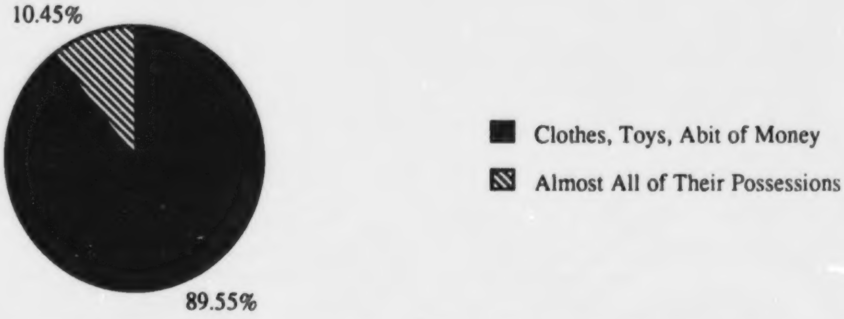
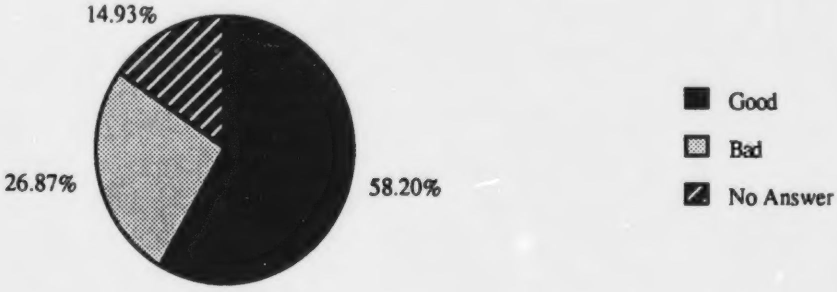


Figure 4.11: The Women's Views of the Rent.



4.1.4 Moving into Discovery House and First Impressions

The waiting period for the women prior to their move into the House was viewed as not particularly long by the majority (Figure 4.7). Almost 90 percent of the women came with clothing for themselves and their children, a few personal possessions (television, stereo, dishes, some furniture), toys for their children and not much money (Figure 4.10). The majority of the women thought the rent to be very reasonable (58%) in light of "...all the services you get - day care, counselling and a nice suite" (Figure 4.11). Those who felt the rent was too high usually worked and had to "stretch" to find the rent (the majority were on welfare or would soon be).

Upon moving into Discovery House, virtually all the women commented on how beautiful the facility was. It was "heaven." One women observed that it (the building) made her feel that she was worth something "...such a nice apartment block right in the neighborhood tells you the whole community cares."

When asked about the differences between emergency shelters and Discovery House, the women (46.15%) were quick to point out that they had privacy at last (Figure 4.12). They went on to say they had freedom and control over their own behavior and that of their children; they could now cook what they wanted (ethnic meals as an example) and they had "peace and quiet" away from the "zoo." Twenty percent of the women were disappointed that counsellors were not available twenty-four hours a day; they felt they really needed them at this time. Almost 15 percent truly disliked the rules and the formality compared to the flexibility and warmth of the emergency

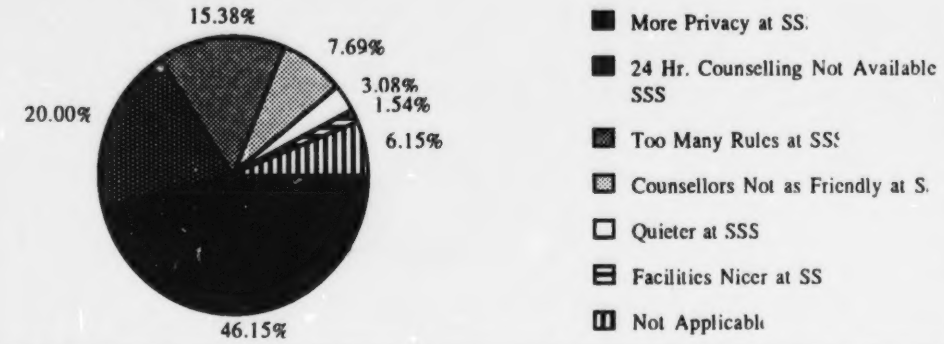


Figure 4.12: Differences Between Emergency (ES) Second Stage Shelters (SSS).

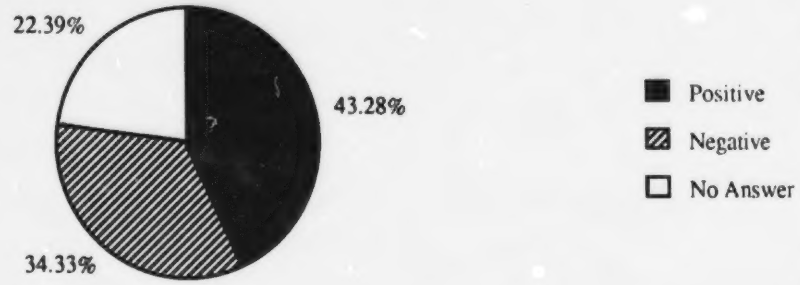


Figure 4.13: The Women's Views of The Other Women.

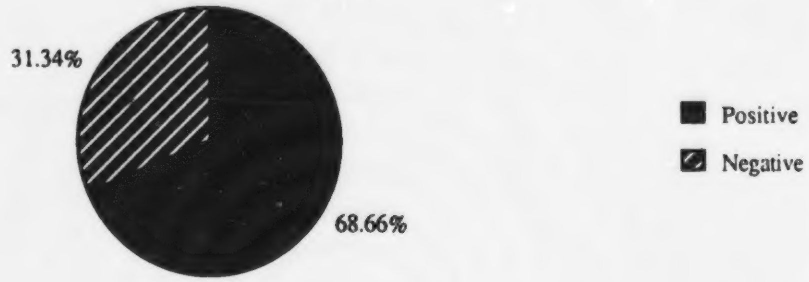


Figure 4.14: The Women's View of Their Counsellor.

Forty-three percent of the women felt that the other residents were "kind," "helpful," "supportive" and friendly (Figure 4.13). Thirty-four percent of the women viewed the other residents in less than a positive light. They found the other women to be "cold," "distant," "depressing," "gossipy," and just generally unfriendly. The women who had the more negative views tended to explain them by comparing Discovery House and emergency shelters. We inferred that because of communal living, they became more intimate with the other women more quickly.

Each woman was assigned their own counsellor. Sixty-eight percent of the women viewed their counsellor positively while 31 percent of the women had concerns (Figure 4.14). On the positive side, the women perceived their counsellors to be "warm," "helpful," "kind," "friendly," or "supportive." On the negative side, the women tended to see their counsellors as "cold," and "indifferent." Being "too formal" was a common theme. Sixty-one percent of the women had very specific goals for themselves and their children while 38 percent had none (Figure 4.15). These goals were as varied as there were women - get a divorce, go to school, get counselling, find a job, etc.

During this first week at the shelter, 25 percent of the women's batterers knew where they were, about 16 percent of their families knew, and only 4 percent of the women told no one (Figure 4.16). Overall, 37 percent of the women had some contact with their batterers (Figure 4.17).

At the end of the admission interview, we asked the women what they were feeling at that time. Fifty-three percent said they were

Figure 4.15: Proportion of Women Who Had Goals At Entrance.

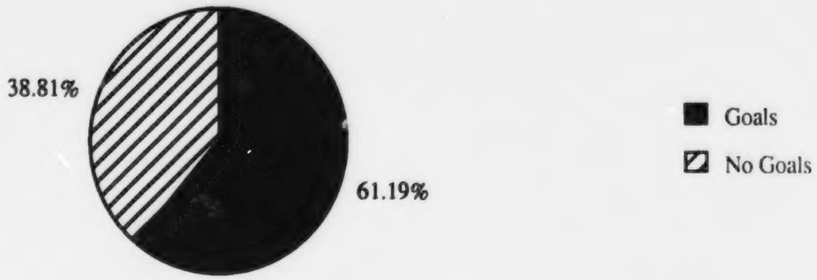


Figure 4.16: Identification of Who Knows Where The Women Are.

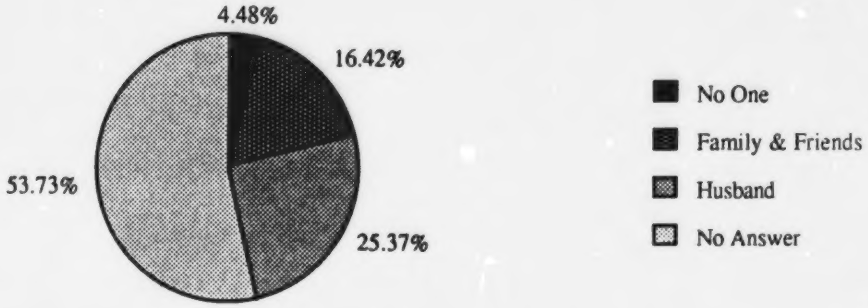
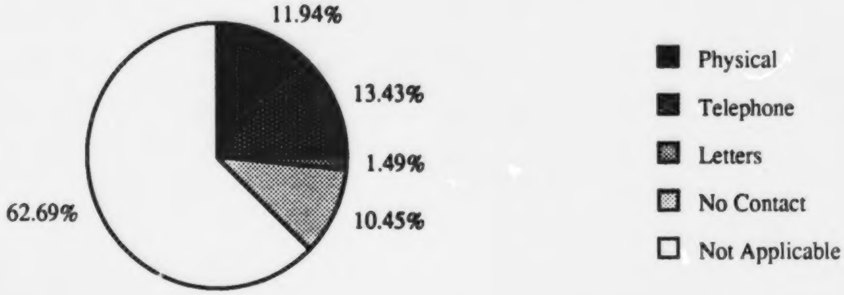


Figure 4.17: Type of Contact the Women Have With Their Batterers.



feeling very badly. The most common themes were confusion, lonely, lost, and let down. Those women who felt good (31%) tended to mention that they felt safe or secure (Figure 4.18).

4.1.5 Summary

The experiences of the women at time of admission suggested a number of important themes as follows:

a) Women moving into this second stage house are still in crisis primarily because they have few choices given their situation.

b) This state of crisis is exacerbated by the admission process and the moving.

c) Experiences at the emergency shelters colored their perceptions at the second stage housing in terms of their views of their counsellors, the other residents, and the general atmosphere.

d) The women's major needs at time of admission appeared to be a safe and secure place, a friendly and informal environment, and twenty-four hour counselling to help them deal with the move and to reassure them about their children.

e) The physical appearance of the shelter was very important to their well-being.

f) Self-contained housing as opposed to communal living was the overwhelming preference.

4.2 The Women's Views at Midway

Thirty-four women agreed to participate in an interview midway through their stay at Discovery House. The interview attempted to

Figure 4.18: The Women's Feelings At One Week.

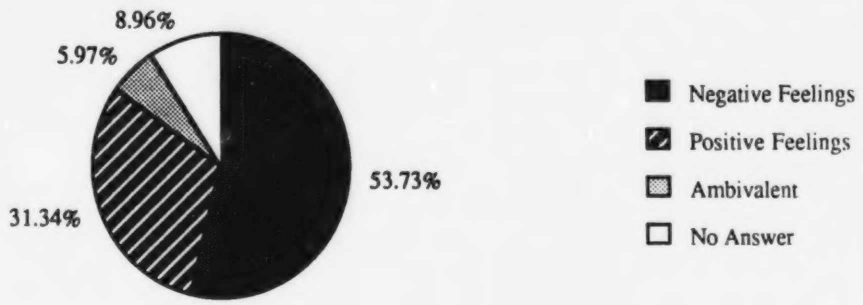


Figure 4.19: The Women's Average Day at Discovery House.

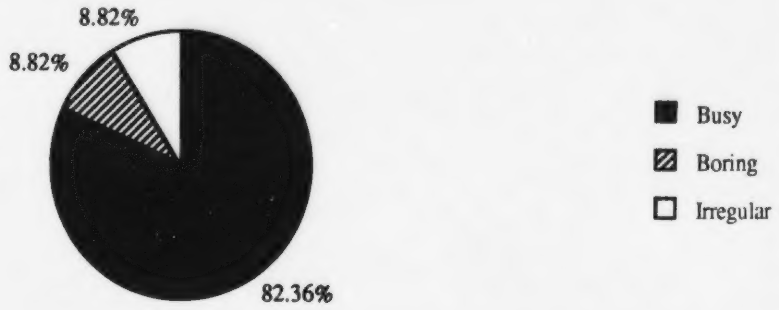
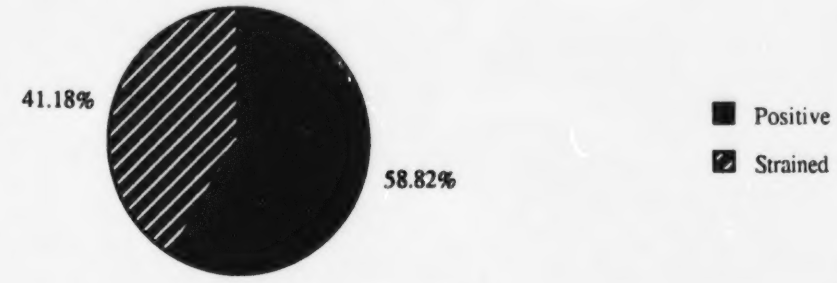


Figure 4.20: The Women's Relationships With The Other Residents.



uncover what their experiences were like in reference to their every day activities, their views on programs, their use of outside agencies and their trials and tribulations.

4.2.1 The Average Day

Eighty-two percent of the women noted in varying terms that their average day was "hectic," "rushed," and "extremely busy." Our question probably was not a good one (Figure 4.19). One woman made this clear, "...there isn't such a thing as an average day... It's not a smooth life living at Discovery House." The remaining women (18%) thought the average day at Discovery House was just plain boring or highly irregular.

For those women who stated the place was hectic, a day seemed to be packed with cooking, cleaning and child care with numerous appointments to be kept and programs and classes that had to be attended. They knew that if they did not attend programs, they would be asked to leave. The women, therefore, had to plan their days around mandatory programs and the day care hours. For example, those women who worked or went to school had serious problems. They seemed to feel guilty about not going to programs but they were only held during the working day. At the same time, they had to use day care, but the day care only opened at nine in the morning so they had to get another resident to take their children and pick them up or they had to use outside day care. "Just a great big hassle..." as one working mother stated.

The majority of the women who did not work, however, still had their troubles. An outside appointment with doctors, lawyers, social workers, etc. (frequently the only one they could get) sometimes conflicted with programming. This, of course, created binds for them. If the women did not go to programs, they were considered uncommitted.

The data strongly suggested that the women were harried in their endeavors to appear to be committed to the programs and the resolution of their problems. The comment, "I'm too busy to even think..." best symbolized the women's experience.

Other factors influencing their day-to-day existence were their relations with the other women, the rules and the physical setting.

Our data indicated that 41 percent of the women experienced some strain in their relationships with the other residents (Figure 4.20). The most frequently mentioned problems were those that had to do with children and babysitting.[1] The women who viewed themselves as having positive relationships were mainly linked to one or two women in particular and no more. These relationships appeared to be ones of mutual help and caring. Our perceptions were that the women did not see themselves as a communal group. Comments such as, "I'm not one for coffee parties" or "I like to keep to myself..." were prevalent.

The set of formal and informal rules governing Discovery House was a constant theme that the women kept returning to in their interviews. About 18 percent of the women thought they were fine,

---

[1] One woman went to small claims court in order to collect her babysitting fee.

35 percent noted that they could take them or leave them, and 47 percent found them to be oppressive (Figure 4.21). The dissident women voiced their views forcefully.

> "I was controlled and pushed around at home. That's why I left in the first place."
>
> "The rules make you feel like an irresponsible imbecile. My husband did the same thing."
>
> "They come into your suite anytime they feel like it with their pass key to check if its clean...that's an invasion of privacy."
>
> "Making me sign in and out is just about what my husband did."

Besides the control issue, the women indicated that the rules were always changing and hard to keep track of, that they were inconsistently applied (favoritism) and what was alright for staff was not for them.

Schechter (1982) discussed rules as an embodiment of who controls the shelter - the women or the staff within the collective setting. Here it seemed to be more of an issue of the staff trying to control the women's lives. That is, the rules were directed at them personally, and not always at facilitating communal living. That the women did not seem to act as a collective supports this view, and a close examination of the rules lends further support to this contention. For example, keeping your own personal apartment spotless everyday is not going to affect anyone else any more than coming home after 1:00 a.m.

Figure 4.21: The Women's Views of The Rules At Discovery House.

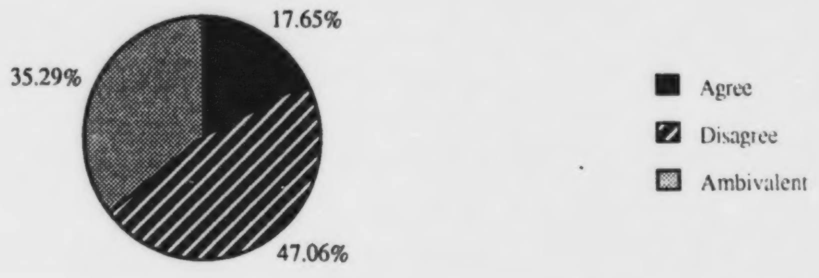


Figure 4.22: The Women's Views on The Programs Offered at Discovery House.

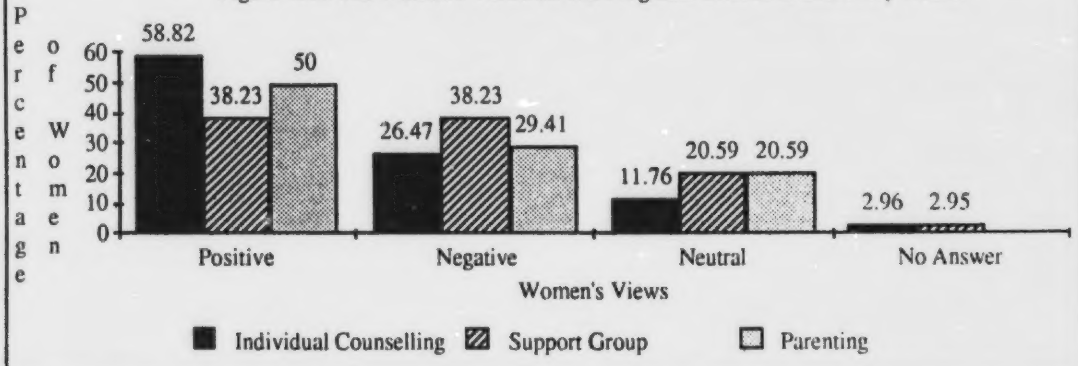
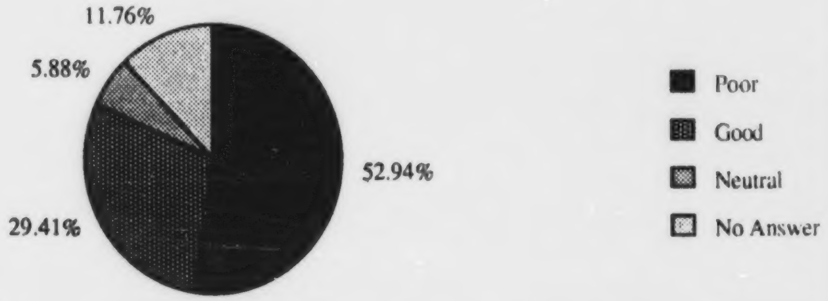


Figure 4.23: The Women's Views on Child Care.



The physical setting continued to be a big plus for the women. Only six women noted that their apartments were a bit small and four women mentioned the need for a play room and a better playground.[2]

4.2.2 Programs

a) Mandatory Programs

The women, if they wished to remain residents, were expected to go to three programs - support group for two hours per week, individual counselling one hour per week, and to whatever educational program happened to be on at the time (two hours per week).

Overall, the women expressed positive views about their individual counselling. Figure 4.22 indicates that almost 59 percent of the women were pleased with their individual counselling program while 26 percent were not so happy. Those women who were happy with their counselling noted most frequently that the counsellors were compassionate or caring and very useful. For example, "...she doesn't badger me, she cares..." or "she helped me get over some very rough spots...she was always there." "She knew the procedures and if she didn't, she would always find out for me."

Those women who did not care for the counselling generally perceived the counsellors as lacking understanding and not caring - "I feel like a number in line" best illustrated this feeling. One woman noted that she felt "...pressured trying to think of something to say for a whole hour" while five felt their counsellors were never available when they needed them. One woman made the old but true comment, "...my crises don't always happen between nine and five...."

---

[2] One third of the women commented on the need for air conditioning and this has since been installed by Discovery House. The hill where Discovery House is located was usually mentioned but nothing can be done about this shortcoming.

The women appeared to be split fifty-fifty in their views of the group as can be seen in Figure 4.22. Thirty-eight percent believed it to be extremely useful - "I feel like a sponge I learn so much." The major theme of the women who felt they benefited was that "...you can compare your situation with others" or "It shows you what others go through...." Those who liked the group also noted that the leader "...gets a lot out of them...she pushes." The women who did not like the group voiced their views passionately. Some comments were:

> "...its like the inquisition...";
>
> "I just sit and listen because it can be cruel...";
>
> "...it would upset me for hours and I would just cry in my room."

Seven of the women had mixed views. They thought the group was probably useful, however, they would qualify their statements. For example:

> "...it is good at drawing things out of you but it is very painful...";
>
> "...I learn a lot but I shouldn't be forced to go...";
>
> "...its good but the group ran out of trust...."

One woman secretly attended a group at one of the emergency shelters because it was seen as "kinder."

The only educational program that received much comment was the Parenting Program. Fifty percent of the women liked the program, 29 percent didn't, and the remaining women did not care about it either way. The problems were basically that it was boring and inappropriate for them (it was geared to younger children). Those who liked it stated that it really helped them to understand their children better.

b) Optional Programs

Figure 4.23 indicates that the women were unhappy about child care. Almost 53 percent of the women thought the day care was poor. Their major concerns were almost split three ways. About one-third of the women did not like the "patronizing" attitude of the staff towards them - "...its like we're not good Moms or something..." or "...when you're working there they are just watching you...to see if you are any good." Another third of the women felt that the staff were very poorly trained. They were seen to be too young and too inexperienced. The majority of these comments were directed to the summer grant students. As one woman said, "...there were too many accidents...I don't trust them." (One child was lost in the park, one nearly drowned, and one child broke their leg when out with the students.) The last set of comments had to do with the problems of changeovers in staff. The children would get attached to someone and then they were gone. Some women thought this made the children very insecure.

The remaining 29 percent of the women thought the day care was excellent mainly because it was so convenient. They felt the programs were good and that their children were really benefiting. For example, "...my children are much calmer and not as withdrawn." Despite the complaints, it was clear to us that the day care program was a very important component of Discovery House. The time issue - opening too late and closing too early was only mentioned by those going to school or work.

Those women who commented on the volunteer programs (only eleven on in-house programs and eighteen on the new start programs) were by and large positive (Figure 4.24). Thirty-two percent of the comments on the in-house programs were basically of appreciation. Volunteers gave the mothers a break when they organized activities for the children and all eleven of the women enjoyed talking with the housesitters. The complaints were that the volunteers were not well enough trained and shouldn't have to do the staff jobs. One volunteer had allegedly sexually molested two of the children and was charged. This, of course, was extremely upsetting to the mothers.

The new start program was seen as excellent by 29 percent of the women who commented on this program (Figure 4.24). It was viewed as being particularly helpful by women who didn't have friends in the city and didn't know their way around. It was also seen as a vehicle for being "...normal" - someone to talk to outside of Discovery House. The overriding complaint was that their new starts were "pushing religion" on them which made them feel awkward. They did not know how to deal with this because they did not want "...to hurt anybody's feelings...."

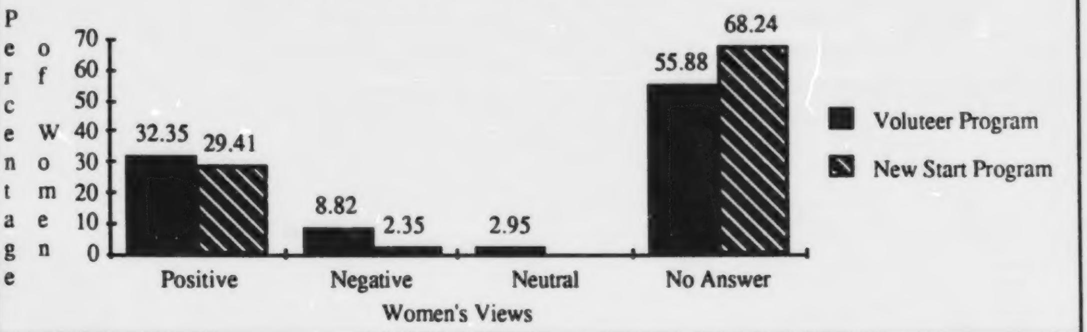


Figure 4.24: The Women's Views of the Volunteer Programs Offered at Discovery House.

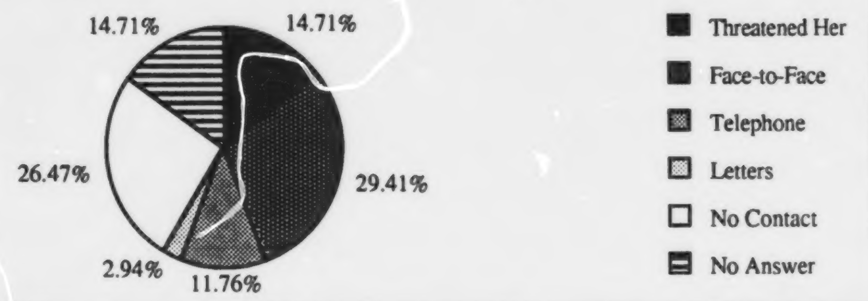


Figure 4.25a: Description of the Type of Contact The Women have with Their Batterer.

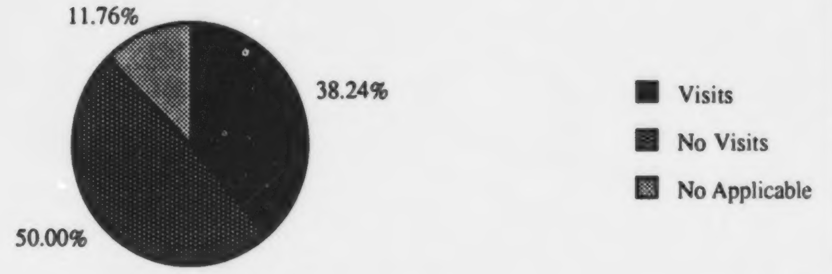


Figure 4.25b: Description of the Batterers Contact With The Children.

4.2.3 Contact with Batterers

Figure 4.25a indicates that 58 percent of the women had contact with their batterers and that 29 percent of this contact was face-to-face. Most of this contact (six of the ten women) was forced contact around the visitation rights of the fathers (seventeen of the women's children saw their fathers) (see Figure 4.25b). The women reported this to be very confusing and trying. Not only were the women faced with the usual dilemmas of upset and distressed children as the result of separation, they feared that their children would not return home despite the fact that the visits were supervised. All six women reported that when the children did return, they were very unsettled. Of the other four women, two were attending weekly counselling sessions with their husbands, the third woman went home every weekend, and the fourth woman went to divorce mediation counselling two times a week as a means to convince her husband to give her a divorce. Most women who had telephone contact with their batterers reported that the calls were mainly about the children or business details for their divorces.

Five women had been periodically threatened by their batterers. One man went on a rampage at the house, another drove around the house constantly and followed her if she went out, one woman received regular threatening telephone calls and one woman was accosted in a local bar by her batterer. One batterer broke into his partner's suite at Discovery House. In those instances where the women had no contact, the fathers did not have visiting rights, he had disappeared, or, the lawyers appeared to be handling the business details and the visitations.

Our impressions were that although the women had considerable contact with their batterer, they were forced into this position through their children. As one woman stated, "I hate the visits but after all it is their Dad," An effective lawyer appeared to reduce this burden.

4.2.4 Outside Agencies

The major outside agency the women used was social services for income support. Eighty-five percent of the women were on welfare (Figure 4.26a). The remaining two women paid their own way, were supported by Indian Affairs or by student loans. Forty-four percent of the women were using one service only, 40 percent were using two services and about 12 percent were using three services (Figure 4.26b). The second service utilized was some form of counselling for themselves or their children at hospitals and private agencies (Figure 4.26c). Fifteen percent of the women were still going back to the emergency shelters for help. Thirty-four percent of the women were using legal aid.

The women's views of the services were generally positive. Although welfare was "demeaning" to a fair portion of the women (over one half) and three quarters of the women had not actually seen their social workers (one woman told us how she ran down the street after the worker to introduce herself), they received their cheques and that was all that mattered. There was only one complaint about legal aid (it did not keep the woman up to date) and all the counselling agencies were considered excellent.

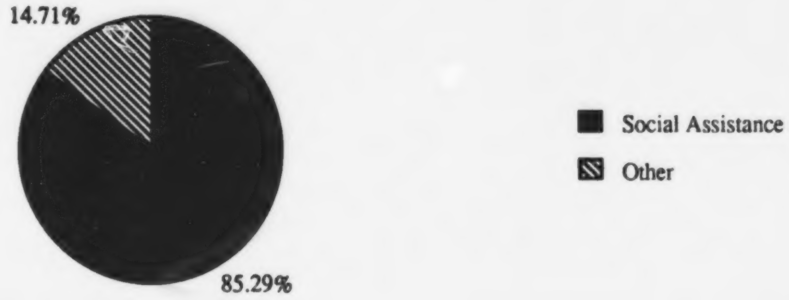


Figure 4.26a: The Women's Use of Outside Agencies - Source of Income.

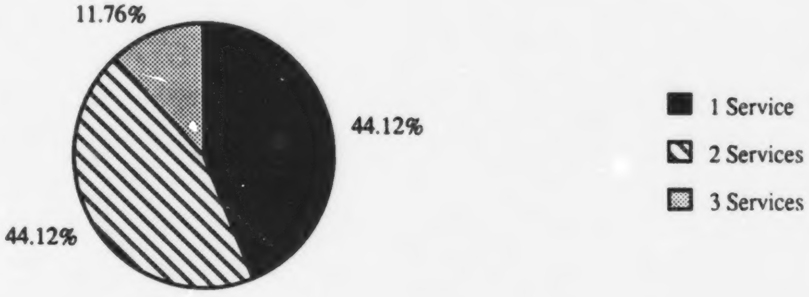


Figure 4.26b: The Women's Use of Outside Agencies - Number of Services Used.

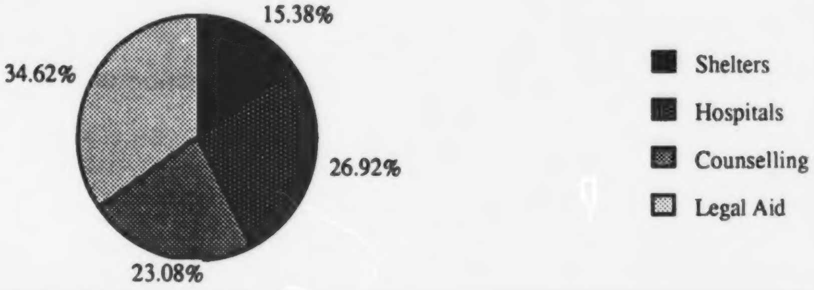


Figure 4.26c: The Women's Use of Outside Agencies - Services Used (Note: most women used more than one service).

4.2.5 Impressions at Midway

The women were not entirely enthusiastic about Discovery House by midway. Most of the women had mixed views and certain reservations. Forty-four percent of the women were very positive (Figure 4.27a). They generally felt "very secure" and they appreciated the support. One woman told us she was "...going to stay here forever. They will have to throw me out." About 9 percent of the women were ambivalent and 47 percent were very negative about the House. It was hard to pin down what was wrong for the women. The rules, the tension amongst staff, the lack of communication, the other residents, the mandatory programs and everything else that could be named was named.

Looking at the women's sense of their own progress gave us a few clues. Little more than half of the women (52%) felt that they had made any progress while the rest had not (Figure 4.27b). Progress seemed to be defined as having made a decision about their husbands. To go home or not to go home was the big question. The indecision appeared to be debilitating. From the women: "I'm just hanging in the air..."; "Life is a hodgepodge..."; "I've travelled some distance but I'm so confused." The fact that only 50 percent had had any firm plans tended to support their comments (Figure 4.27c). These women did not see the program helping them. In a close examination of these women, they were more likely to be having continued contact with their batterers.

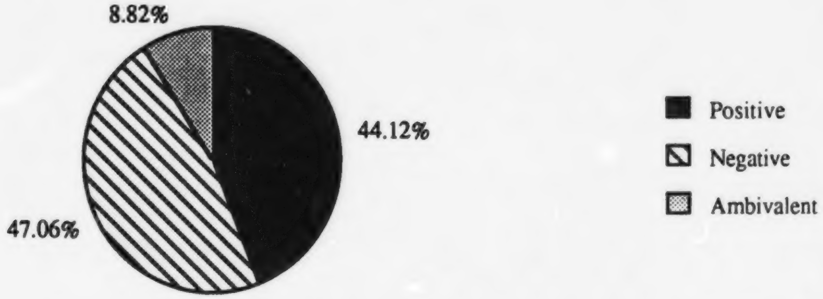


Figure 4.27a: The Women's Feelings About Discovery House at Midway.

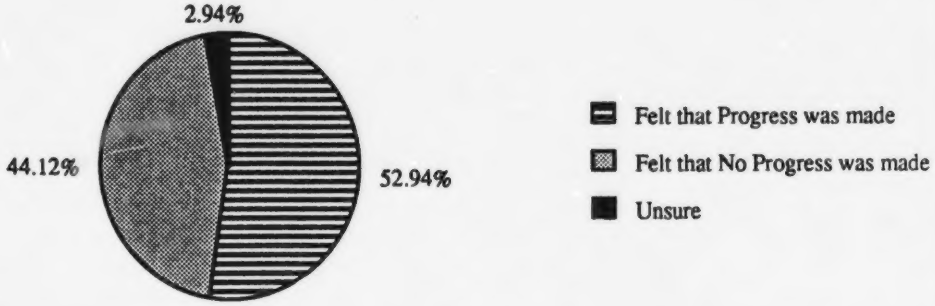


Figure 4.27b: The Status of The Women at Midway.

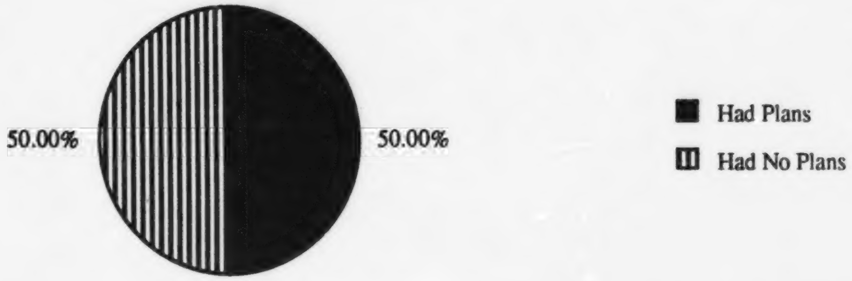


Figure 4.27c: The Women's Plans at Midway.

4.2.6 Summary

The data at midway seemed to point to a number of unexpected processes. The women's accounts of their experiences suggested to us the following:

a) The women appeared to be placed in a number of double binds. They were supposed to take part in the programs but they were encouraged to become established in the community; they were supposed to become independent but they were overburdened with rules, and they were trying to escape their batterers but they are forced to see them through their children. They were supposed to have time to reflect on their situation but they were too busy running from meeting to meeting.

b) Mandatory programs did not make a lot of sense. They implied that every battered woman had the same needs. Our data suggested that individual planning with each woman in terms of what would work for her would be more useful than forcing people to participate in what they do not think they need.

c) The use of untrained, temporary staff was a dangerous practice as is less than thorough screening and training of volunteers.

d) There are probably many reasons why women do not make progress towards their goals. One consistent factor appeared to be that Discovery House did not have a well-articulated set of goals, to include residents who had regular contact with the batterer.

4.3 Leaving Discovery House

Forty-five women participated in a termination interview the day they left Discovery House. Many of their comments supported and amplified what they told us at midway. First, we will summarize their views on programs and add any new insights they offered. We will then look at how they decided to leave, what their plans were and where they went. Figure 4.28 indicates that the women stayed at Discovery House, on average, 228 days.

4.3.1 Programs Revisited

Figures 4.29a and 4.29b outline the women's final views of the programs according to positive/negative views and most preferred program. Seventy-seven percent of the women felt they had benefited from the individual counselling. This was also considered to be the most preferred program (42.22%). The added comments about individual counselling were threefold. Some women felt that they were incompatible with their counsellors (they were too young, too controlling) and they believed they should have the right to change counsellors (which apparently they could not). A large proportion (almost two-thirds) of the women were very upset at the firing of one of their counsellors. To quote, "We weren't even consulted," "She was asked to leave right on the spot. I just cried." Lastly, the women still felt they needed more intensive counselling when they first moved in and they regretted that they could not have any when they left.

The women's views on the groups continued to be split. Fifty-seven percent still felt positively about the group while 42 percent

Figure 4.28: Average Duration of Residence at Discovery House (Mean Stay = 228 days).

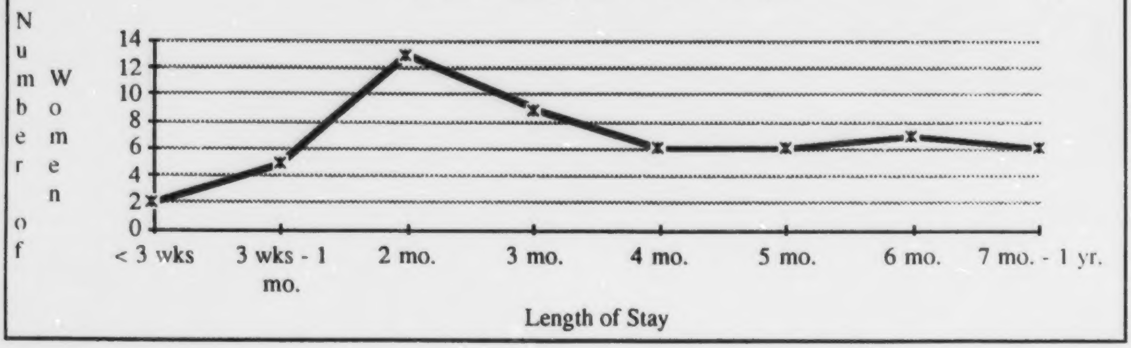


Figure 4.29a: The Women's Views on The Programs Offered at Discovery House.

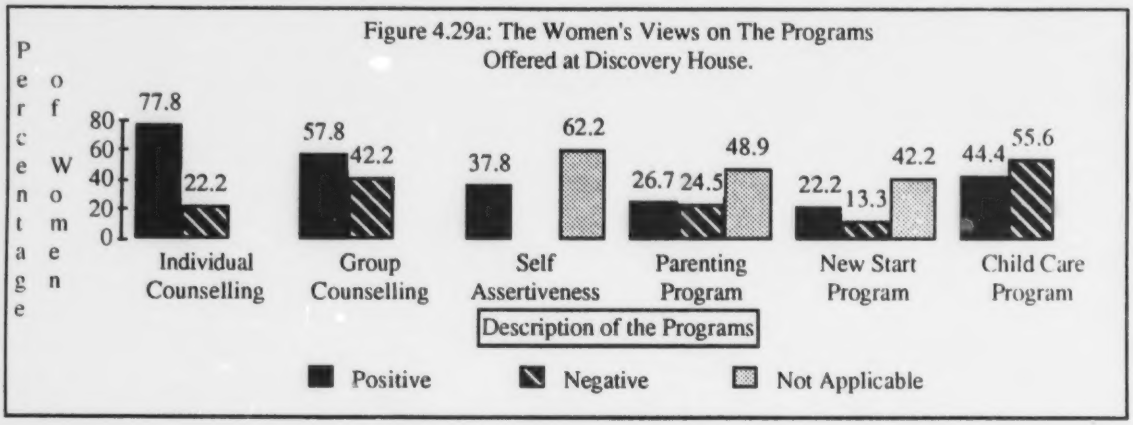
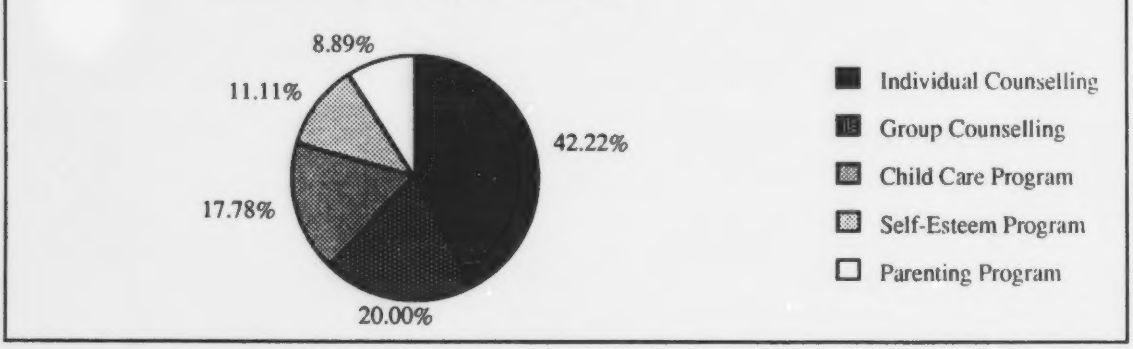


Figure 4.29b: The Women's Views on Programs in terms of Their Most Preferred Progam.



really disliked it. Again they felt the group was good because it helped them appreciate they were not the only person who was battered.

Those that were unhappy with the group (42%) made several important observations. The leader did a great "cut job, bringing things into the open but never repaired them...she just left them hanging and created an atmosphere of blueness for a week." Part of this problem was how anybody could move into the group - women from the outside, new residents, and ex-residents. This led to a continual rehashing with no progress. They were more pleased when the two groups were temporarily split. The women also tried to rectify the situation themselves by meeting after the group late at night to try and put the "meetings into perspective." Confidentiality was another serious complaint. Everybody knew their business. "It was like living in a fish bowl," one woman said. In fact, one woman actually reported another group member to child protection (Child Welfare) for how she treated her children based on what she said in the group. "You can take a horse to water but you can't make him drink" symbolized their feelings about group being mandatory. Several women said they would go to group and "create a scene" so they could walk out and not have to attend.

All the women noted that the self-assertiveness training really helped them. Parenting was split with 27 percent in favor, and 25 percent not in favor. Since there were two distinctly different teachers, it was clear to us that the success of this program depended upon who taught it and not so much the program content. The New Start program was thought to be a great program by all the women but individually it was not working out. The majority of the women stated their New Starts had personal problems or they were just "too busy" and lastly, that religion was being forced upon them. Our sense was that recruiting, matching and training were not optimal. As other studies of volunteer programs have indicated, too heavy reliance on one religious group as a resource is not always wise. In retrospect, child care was considered to be very important and suggestions were consistent with midway. Young, inexperienced staff should not be used.

4.3.2 The Decision to Leave

The women's reasons for leaving are found in Figure 4.30. Twenty-six percent of the women decided to leave because they could not tolerate the rules and regimentation. The common themes were represented in the women's comments:

> "I don't need them (rules) shoved down my throat";
>
> "...the rules are pulling me backwards...";
>
> "...I feel like I'm living at the office";
>
> "...the rules made me feel dependent and I didn't like that...";
>
> "...I feel bombarded with rules, questions, groups...."

The rules were a thorny issue at midway and still were at termination. Our field observations indicated that the conventional wisdom at Discovery House was that when the women "bucked" the system, they were showing signs of independence and were therefore

Figure 4.30: Description of the Reasons Why the Women Left Discovery House.

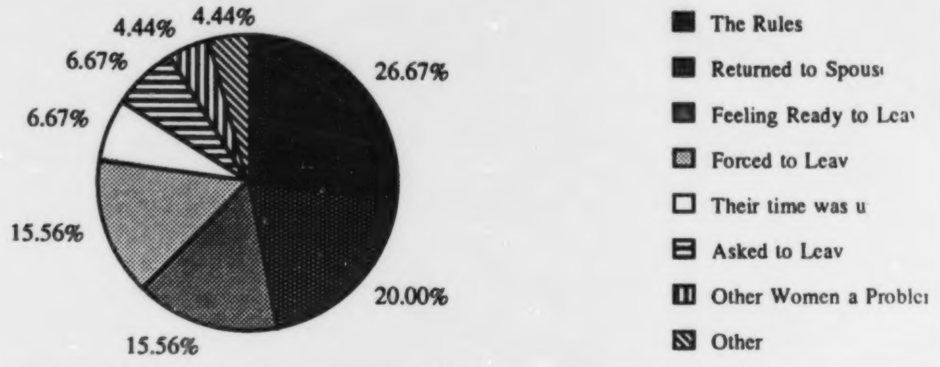


Figure 4.31a: The Women's Overall Experience at Discovery House at Termination.

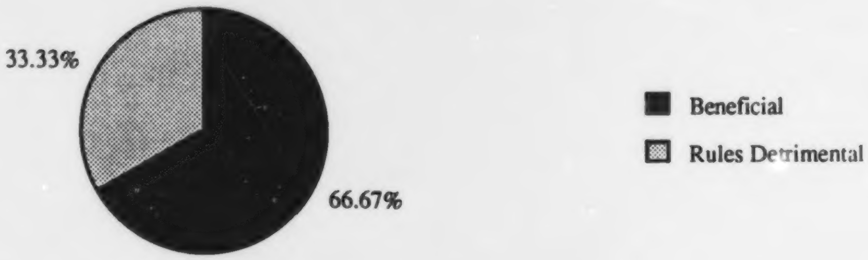
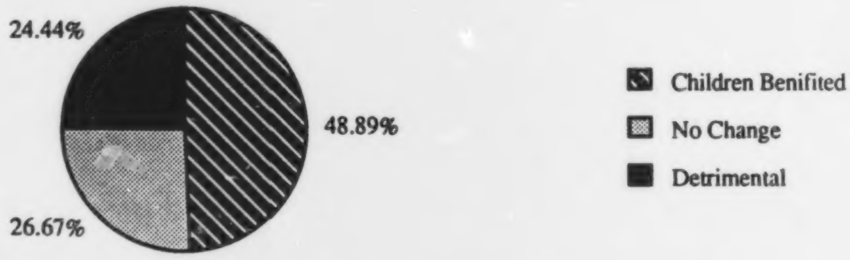


Figure 4.31b: The Women's View of Their Childrens' Overall Experience at Discovery House at Termination.



ready to leave. This may have been true, however, almost one-half of these women did not feel that they were ready to leave.

Twenty percent of the women left because they were returning to the original battering relationships. They felt that they had changed and that their basic contact with their husband would change. The majority seemed to want to bring their families back together and "start again." All of these women had been seeing their husbands regularly. One woman told us she "...wouldn't tell anyone at Discovery House i was going home. I always intended to but they don't like that."

Fifteen percent of the women left because they felt "stronger," "in control," "more confident," and "ready to go it alone." These women felt very satisfied with Discovery House. The place seemed to provide for them a vehicle to begin the healing process and a safe haven in a storm. Another 15 percent of the women felt forced out of the house. One woman felt forced to leave because her husband would take all her possessions if she did not find her own place right away. One woman felt that staff forced her to leave because, in their view, she did not require the program and she was taking up a place unnecessarily. Four women felt pushed out because they were protesting staff firings. They didn't want to go but they felt they had no alternatives since they had voiced their objections. The last of these women left because she was called a "liar" when she told staff she had stayed at her girlfriends house all night. Seven percent of the women felt that their time was up. They had stayed over the six month time limit and it was time to move on. One woman stated "you have to move anyway so I left early." Another woman said she felt "...she was taking up a space another woman in need could use."

Two women left because of the other women. As one woman stated, "...I felt like I'm on an emotional roller coaster of all the other ladies' feelings." Three women stated they were kicked out on the spot. One woman was asked to leave in twenty minutes because her children painted on the wall, one because of ripping out the Agency intercom and reading the staff communications book, and one because she refused to go to programs. One woman was confronted by her counsellor that she had been going to an emergency shelter for counselling and so she got angry and went back to the emergency shelter. The last woman said rather emphatically she "hated everything there was about Discovery House" and that is how she decided to leave.

From the termination interviews, then, we have noted several mechanisms for exit. Some women were feeling that they had to leave because they did not fit in very well, many could not follow the rules or they were labelled trouble makers and had to move on. Some women left because they were asked to leave on extremely short notice. They were very clearly thrown back into crisis.[3] There were those women who carefully planned their exit and although a fearful time, it was an exciting time because they were exercising their independence. Some women left because their time was up. Finally, for those women who returned to their original relationship, there was a subtle process put into motion. They were viewed as somewhat of a failure by staff and they sensed these attitudes. That some women were careful not to tell staff they were going home and that they left very abruptly supports this view although the official stance of Discovery House was that it was acceptable to return to the batterer.

---

[3] Being thrown out with twenty minutes to vacate the premises was extremely stressful. At the same time, another shelter was telephoned and advised not to take this family (reported from other shelter).

4.3.3 Overall Experience

Despite the problems with Discovery House, the women basically reported that the overall experience was positive for them. Sixty-six percent of the women stated that in the final analysis, they had gained from the experience (Figure 4.31a). For example, they stated: "...it got me off the merry-go-round, a chance to think, time out..."; "I learned independence, how to rely on myself..."; Sharing was number one...I learned I wasn't alone"; "I've made lasting friendships..."; I feel very safe and secure now..."; and "I have learned and learned...." The remaining 33 percent again mentioned the rules. Rules and how they controlled them and made them dependent.

As for their children, the majority of the women (48.89%) felt that they had really benefited from living at Discovery House (Figure 4.31b). Comments in terms of improvement included that they could communicate better with their children, they felt they and their children were less likely to use violent behavior, their children were more outgoing, friendly and more affectionate. The remainder of the women felt that there was no real change (26.67%) or that their children had deteriorated (24%). Problems included the upset of children by the continual changes of staff in child care, becoming more possessive of their mother, fighting and hitting other children, and problems at school usually of the type involving aggressive behavior.

4.3.4 Plans

Almost all of the women had definite plans when they left Discovery House. The most mentioned plan was to ensure that they secured a divorce (ten women), followed by going back to school (nine women), or getting a job (eight women). In the two latter cases, the women wished to get off welfare. For those going back to their batterers, five women intended to continue in counselling, one was going home and waiting for her husband to go to jail (eight weapons charges) and then she was going to run taking her sons who had remained with her husband. The other three women who returned home were "hoping for the best." Three women planned to return to emergency shelters, one to re-establish herself in another city and two because they had no other place to turn to. The remaining four women in the sample wished to get settled into their own place and get their children into school.

The most mentioned challenges these women saw themselves facing were making it on their own with no backup and for those returning to their original relationship making the relationship work. The majority of the women felt better about themselves, at least at the time of the interview (Figure 4.31c). One woman's comment

Figure 4.31c: The Women's Overall Feelings About Themselves at Termination.

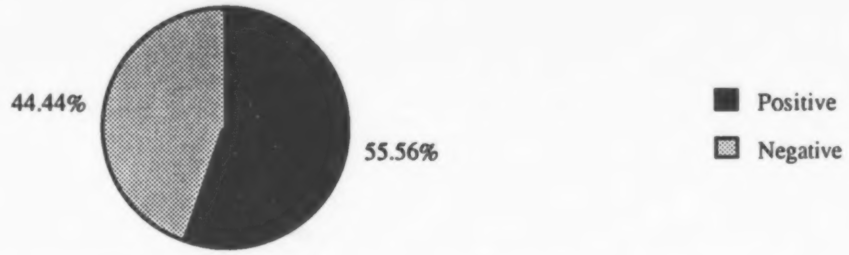


Figure 4.32: Where The Women Went Overall (N=72)

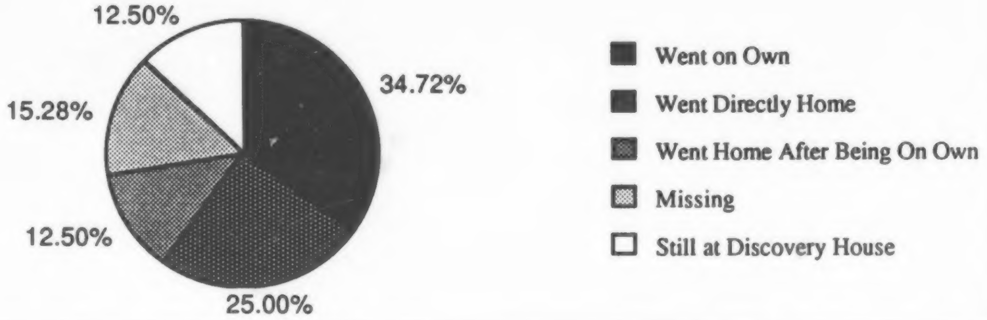
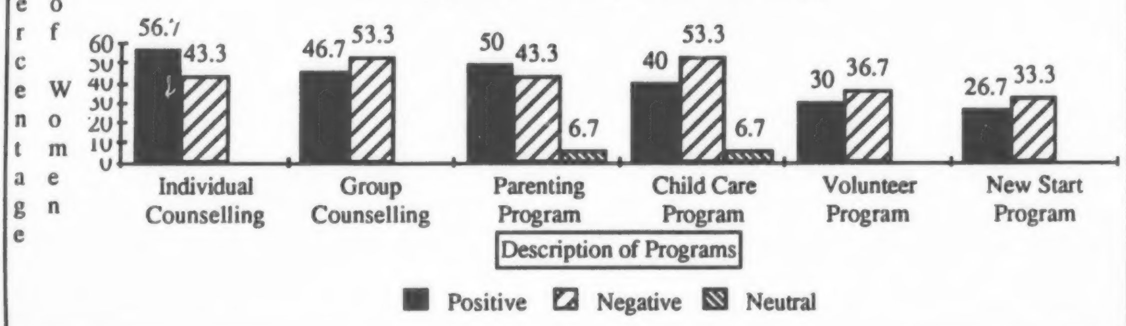


Figure 4.34: Description of The Women's Views of The Programs at Discovery House at Follow-Up.



captures the women's feelings: "...I feel strong, happy and confident." Those women who did not feel too positively (44%) stated such things as "very confused," "scared," "mixed-up," "rejected," "nervous wreck from moving" as representative comments about their feelings at the time of their leaving.

4.3.5 Changes the Women Suggested

The women suggested a number of general changes that they thought would have helped them in their stay at Discovery House. They are as follows:

a) Not surprisingly, the women felt the rules should be changed. They should be less in number and enforced consistently. They believed they should have some say in the determination of the rules and how they would be enforced. Programs should not be mandatory.

b) They suggested that there should be more individual counselling, that the one hour counselling was too rigid and that the counsellors should be more accessible, particularly at night, on weekends and after they leave the House.

c) The groups should be run at night and split according to where the women are at in the stages of healing. (Discovery House has tried both of these changes once and then went back to the old system. Staying flexible according to the women's needs would probably be closer to what the women were suggesting.)

d) Child care hours should be more flexible to accommodate the working mother or the mother going to school.

e) Confidentiality needed to be observed more frequently. Several women felt they should be allowed to attend their own "case conferences" and eight women recommended changing the intercom system. They honestly believed that staff were listening in to their conversations in their apartments. Several women felt that volunteers did not need to know "all their business." Finally, staff should not have the right to enter their suites without notifying the resident in advance.

f) With reference to how long a woman could stay, the suggestions were basically that this should be flexible. Different women have different needs. Some women could leave sooner and some could leave later.

g) It was suggested that staff should be more accepting of their decision to return to their original partners. This was an unwelcome pressure that forced them to be circumspect about their activities and, in fact, to break the rules.

h) The board should be better informed if they are going to make decisions about the House and the women's lives.[4]

i) The women felt that they should be given more than twenty minutes to twenty-four hours notice when they are asked to leave.

---

[4] A number of women indicated that they had written to the board in the aftermath of the intercom incident (to be discussed in Chapter VI) and did not even receive an answer. They concluded the board was not informed.

4.3.6 Summary and Conclusions

We would agree with the women about their suggestions for change. What struck us most poignantly, was the turbulent times they were having, yet how necessary Discovery House was to them in their attempts to end the battering. That is, despite their difficulties, they still felt they had benefited. The major themes that emerged from their accounts were as follows:

a) The women remained very consistent in their views about the rules and regulations and programs, which suggested that these should be reviewed with a goal of strengthening what seemed to be useful and dispensing with that which was not. Individual counselling and the child care service should be strengthened while the educational programs and the group should be re-evaluated as should the rules and regulations.

b) The conditions under which the women left were unexpected. Overall, the experiences were negative. Besides reviewing programs and rules and regulations, which led to a number of women leaving, it appeared that the whole process of forcing women out and throwing them out should be adjusted to suit the women's needs. The organizational structure and the norms appeared to be more decisive than whether or not the women were ready to leave.

c) The women were not being afforded the ordinary rights of Alberta citizens under the Residency and Tenant's Act of Alberta.

4.4 Six Months Later

Thirty women were available for follow-up interviews. As Lynch (1978) noted in her follow-up study of abused children, this was the "researcher's nightmare." The women (fourteen) who had unpleasant experiences at Discovery House wished to have nothing to do with us while eleven women had completely disappeared. Through conversations with their lawyers and families, it was clear that they were on the run again and wished not to be found under any circumstances. The follow-up interviews are therefore not truly representative of the women and must be interpreted with caution.

The overall movement of the women is outlined in Figure 4.32. We would note that, overall, about 35 percent of the women went on their own but almost 38 percent eventually returned to their batterers. Fifteen percent were missing and 12 percent were still at the House. The movement of the women we interviewed at follow-up appears in Figure 4.33. Five women went directly back to their batterers. Six women went back after being on their own after 3 months on average and two of the women left again. The rest of the women went on their own.

In the follow-up interviews, we asked the same questions to ascertain if being away from the House changed their views at all. The results were fairly similar to those at midway and termination although the value of individual counselling and the group lost some ground (Figure 4.34). Here we concentrate on what happened to the women when they left.

4.4.1 Work and School

Thirteen percent of the thirty women were working full-time and 10 percent were working part-time (Figure 4.35). The jobs were

Figure 4.33: Where The Women Went After Follow-Up (N = 30).

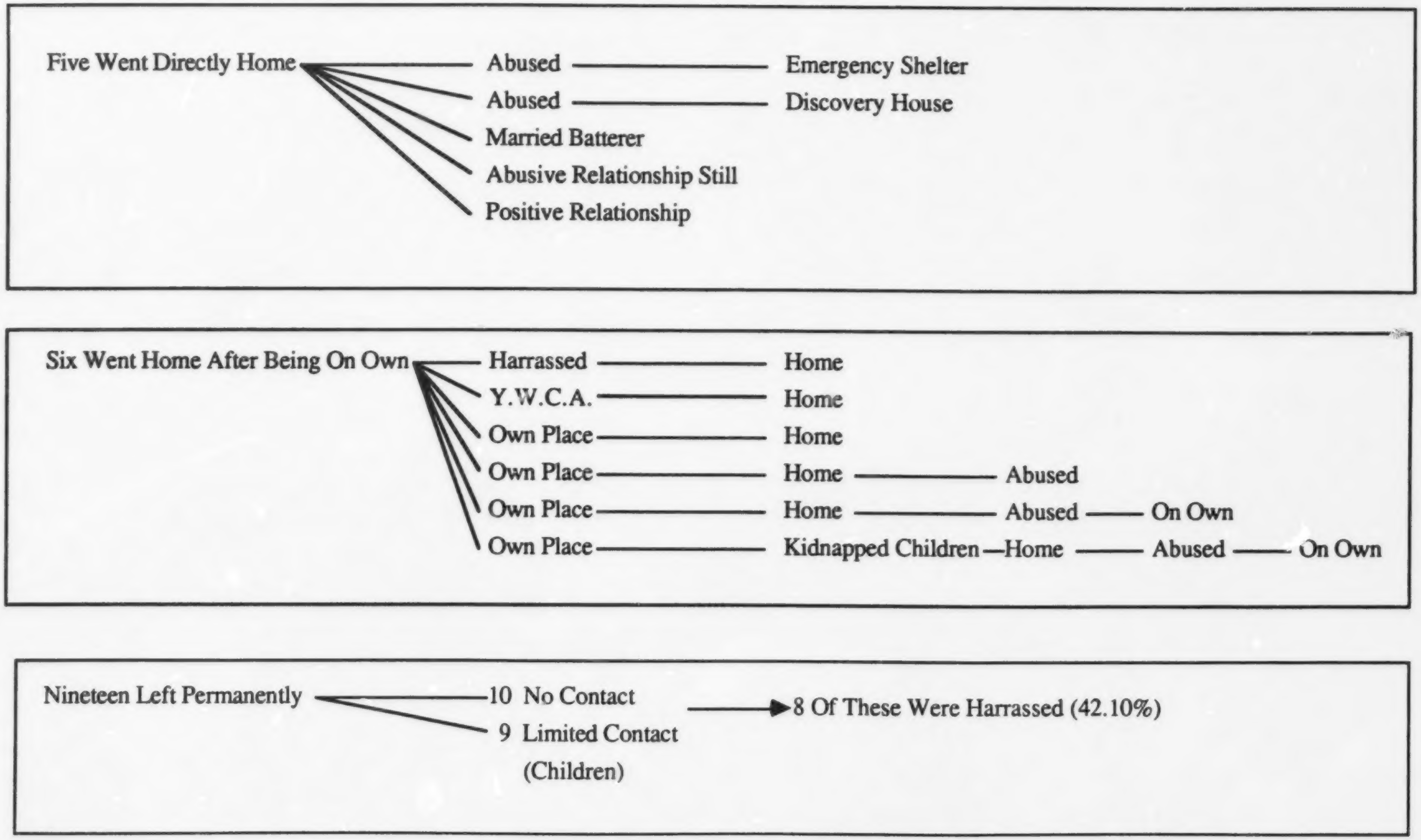

Five Went Directly Home
Abused
Emergency Shelter
Abused
Discovery House
Married Batterer
Abusive Relationship Still
Positive Relationship
Six Went Home After Being On Own
Harrassed
Home
Y.W.C.A.
Home
Own Place
Home
Own Place
Home
Abused
Own Place
Home
Abused
On Own
Own Place
Kidnapped Children
Home
Abused
On Own
Nineteen Left Permanently
10 No Contact
9 Limited Contact
(Children)
8 Of These Were Harrassed (42.10%)

Figure 4.35: The Employment Status of The Women At Follow-Up.

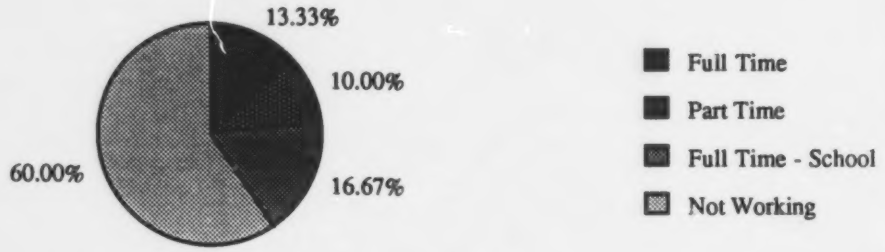


Figure 4.36a: The Types of Services Used by The Women (Note: Each is calculated out of 30 since each woman could have used more than one service).

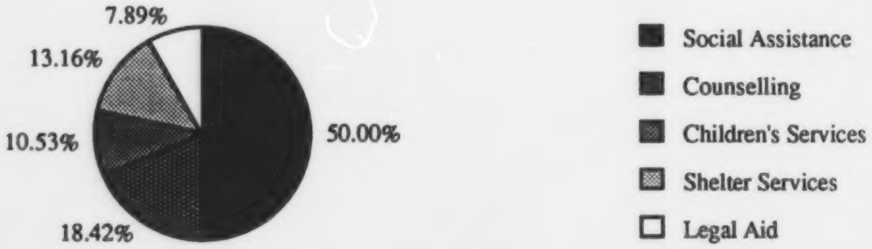
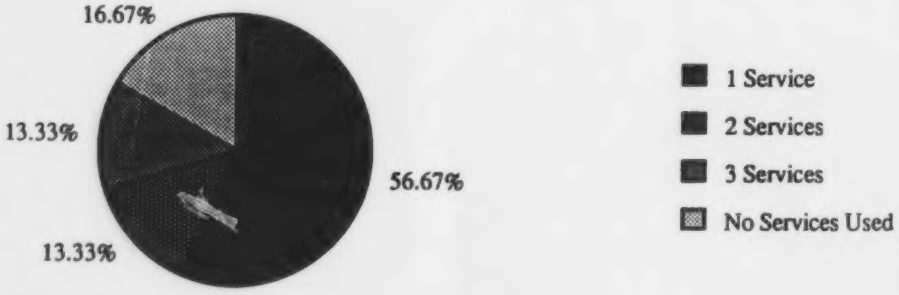


Figure 4.36b: The Number of Services Used by The Women.



typical "female" type jobs such as clerical, sewing, caregivers in other institutions, and cleaning (at Discovery House). Two women worked and quit because they could not manage their families and their jobs. Both of these women had large numbers of children which made it very difficult to be a working mother in a single parent family. Almost 17 percent of the women were going to school full-time including university. It was a definite struggle for these women as it is for most single parents trying to juggle work/school and home and make ends meet. Sixty percent of the women were not working. Of the 60 percent of the women not working, the majority were on welfare including two living with their partners. One woman living with her husband was self-sufficient.

The interviews with these women indicated that life was circumscribed by poverty. For example, many could not continue their counselling sessions because they could not afford babysitters and/or transportation. Some felt very isolated because they couldn't afford to go out and some felt "blue" because they could not manage what money they had. One astute woman noted that "...you can't manage your money because its managed by welfare - so much for this and so much for that and nothing left over."

When we looked at the women's plans for the next three months, "becoming financially independent" was the most mentioned plan, followed by going to school as an interim step to becoming financially independent. The lack of money was the number one problem.

4.4.2 Outside Agencies

Figure 4.36a shows the use of outside agencies. As noted above, welfare was the major service utilized. Fifty percent of the women were on welfare and everyone of them stated they wanted to change this somehow. It was "humiliating," "de-humanizing," and "constrained" their lives. It is interesting to note that most of the women were not officially on welfare when they first entered the shelter systems. Welfare was another indignity they had to suffer because they chose not to be beaten.

Eighteen percent of the women were involved in some form of counselling for themselves or their children which they viewed as being very important and positive. Thirteen percent of the women were back at shelters, including Discovery House. Overall, 56 percent of the women were using one service, 13 percent were using two, 13 percent were using three services, while 16 percent were using none (Figure 4.36b). Our sense was that more services would have been utilized if the women had had the financial wherewithal to access them.

4.4.3 Contact with Batterers

Thirty percent of the women had contact with their batterers only because of visitation rights of the fathers (Figure 4.37). These continued to be painful contacts both for the children and the women. Problems included manipulating the child against their mother, false promises and not showing up according to schedule. While 33 percent of the women had no contact with their batterers, almost 37 percent

Figure 4.37: The Women's Contact With The Batterer at Follow-Up.

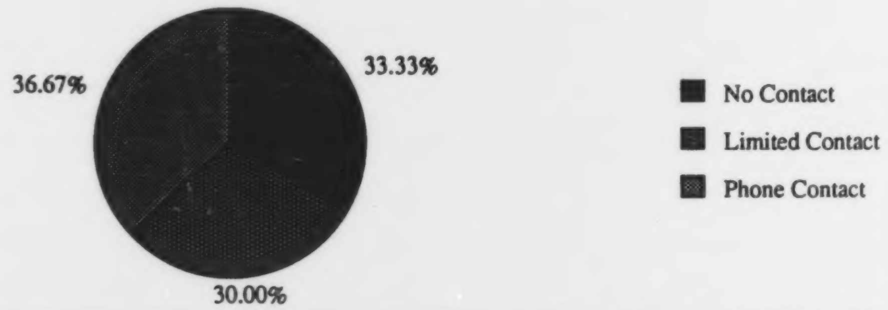


Figure 4.38a: The Women's Links with Discovery House at Follow-Up.

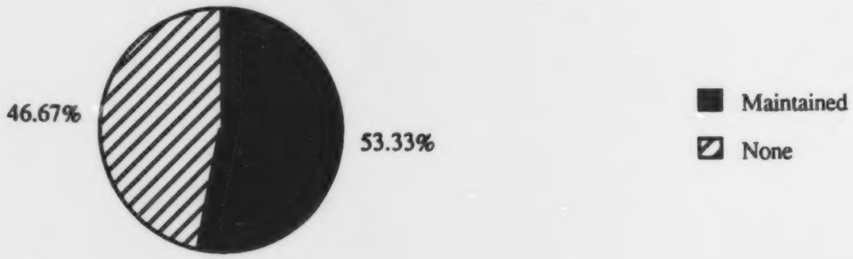
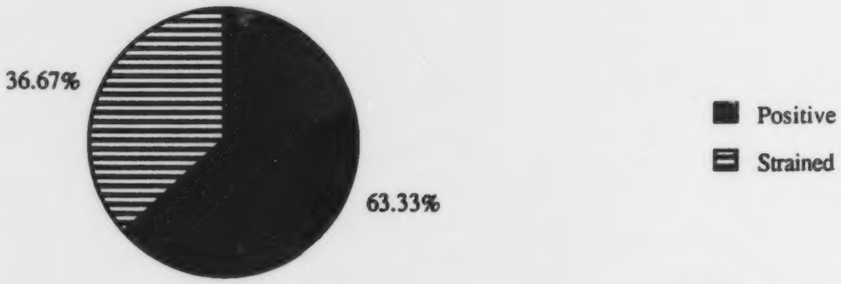


Figure 4.38b: Residents Relationships at Follow-Up.



had considerable contact. This figure included those who returned to their batterers either immediately or after living approximately three months in the community.

Of those women who returned directly to their batterers, two were abused and were forced to return to the House and an emergency shelter. One woman married her batterer, one woman reported a very positive relationship with no abuse, and one woman was being abused again. This woman cried throughout the interview but was not prepared to do the shelter route again (see Figure 4.33).

Half of the women who went home after a stay in the community were abused again. While two women left, one remained and continued to be abused. Like the previous woman, she could not face going back to a shelter. Of the women who had no or little contact with their batterers, 42 percent of these women were still harassed by their batterers (Figure 4.33). These men broke into the women's homes despite restraining orders, they hung around the women's homes, they threatened to abduct the children, they placed threatening telephone calls at all hours of the night, and did so on a continual basis. The thirty women we interviewed moved, on average, three times in six months all to avoid their batterers. One woman was forced to change her legal name and several changed provinces.

What amazed us was the persistence of the batterers over such a long time frame. We also noted that these women were not receiving a lot of help from the police. On two occasions when the women called the police, they received no response (batterers had broken into their house and beat them), and had to call Discovery House to intervene on their behalf with the police. Both these women had restraining orders.

4.4.4 Links with Discovery House

Although the formal policy of Discovery House was no real follow-up except through New Starts (which was not working, Figure 4.34), 53 percent of the women were having some contact with the shelter (Figure 4.38a). Most of the contact was at New Start luncheons (seven women), not because of their New Start, but to see if the other women had "made it." Three were still attending support group, two continued to call their counsellors when they were "down and out," one woman went to the clothing bank one time, one woman visited her friend at Discovery House. One picked up her mail at the House. Three women who had contact with Discovery House also noted that they kept in close contact with previous staff who had been fired or let go. The staff had been very "kind to them." It appeared that the House still served as a force in the women's lives - as inspiration, a support, and a source of practical help.

Similarly, 63 percent of the women had at least one significant relationship with an ex-resident (Figure 4.38b). These relationships appeared to be ones of mutual support. At least two of the women lived in the same complex. Friendship appeared to be the key word.

4.4.5 Discovery House in Retrospect

In retrospect, 80 percent of the women felt that Discovery House had helped them in some way (Figure 4.39a). As the following

Figure 4.39a: Discovery House in Retrospect - Proportion of Women who Benefitted from the Experience.

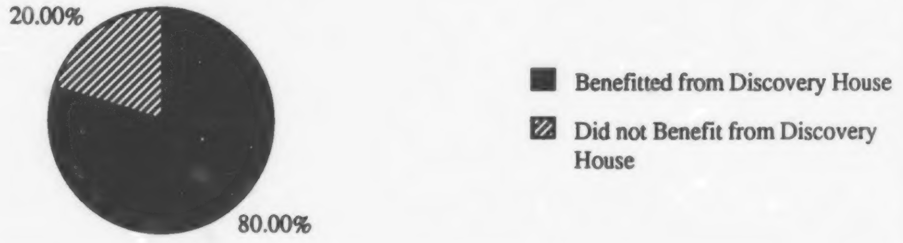


Figure 4.39b: Discovery House in Retrospect - Proportion of Women who Thought Their Children Benefitted from The Experience.

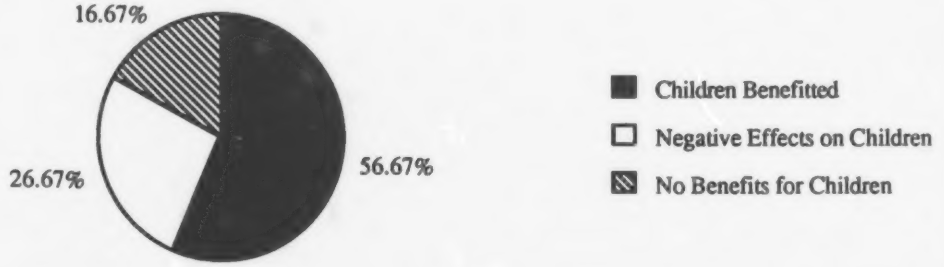
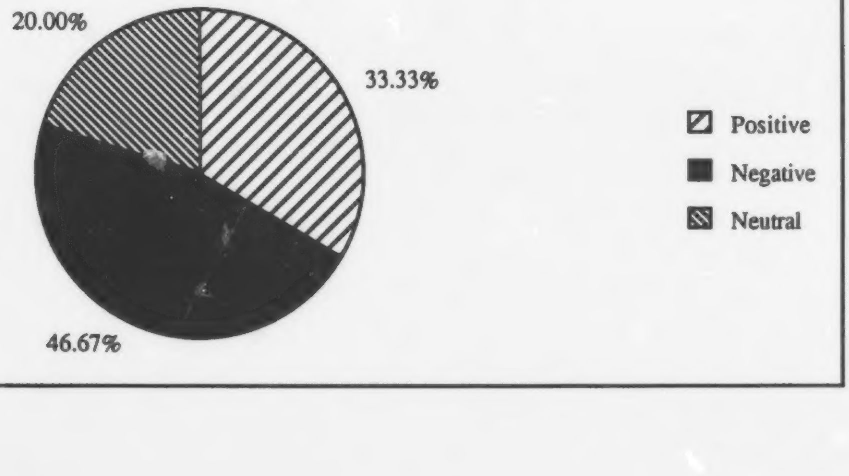


Figure 4.39c: Discovery House in Retrospect - The Women's Feelings at Follow-Up.



comments indicated, the shelter was needed: "I couldn't have made it otherwise"; "I felt I was all alone before going to Discovery House"; "It was there when I needed it"; "I feel I have really grown as a person." On the negative side, perhaps the most telling comment was "I felt I was in worse shape when I left then when I moved in."

In reference to their children, the women felt that their children had definitely benefited from their stay at the House. Fifty-six percent of the women noted that their children had become more stable (Figure 4.39b). Twenty-six percent felt their children had become worse in the sense of being withdrawn and quiet while 16 percent felt there had been no change.

When asked how they felt at this time, 33 percent of the women noted positive feelings and 46 percent were not so positive (Figure 4.39c). Twenty percent of the women were neutral. Those women feeling positive noted feelings of "hope," "confidence," and "happiness." Those women feeling negatively mentioned fear, frustration, confusion, "falling apart," "angry," and lonely. Our overall sense was that the women had made modest gains but none of the gains had been easy. It had been a struggle every inch of the way.

4.4.6 Objective Analyses

Four scales were administered to the women at the time they were admitted, when they left, and six months later. Thirty women completed all four scales. Although there were problems with these scales (see Appendix III), they do provide a rough measure of changes in the women's situations. Table 10a provides a t-test for the difference between the scale means by time interval for the thirty women.

From time one to time three there was a change on all scales except on the Conflict Tactics Scale. The women, overall, were less fearful, had more internal control and more social independence at six months follow-up compared to what they experienced when they entered Discovery House. The Conflict Tactics Scale showed no significant change and we believe this to be an artifact of what the scale measured. The scale measured reasoning and verbal agression and may be reflecting the harassment which 42 percent of women reported experiencing.

That Discovery House reduced the women's fear is probably correct since the difference in fear levels was significantly reduced from time one to time two (termination), but not from time two to time three. The gain was made at the House. The women's social independence also significantly increased from time one to time two but not from time two to time three, suggesting the House might have had some influence in promoting social independence. That there is no significant difference between time one and time two, and time two and time three on the Rotter Scale of Locus of Control strongly suggested that this was an accumulative process over time because the change occurred from time one to time three.

4.4.7 Summary

The data at follow-up addressed several important issues.

a) The women were living in poverty and this was preventing them from accessing services they needed and contributed to social isolation. This finding was similar to the Monroe House study.

b) After six months of separation from their batterers, a large proportion of women were still seriously harassed (42% not including those abused again). Legal and police protection were not working. Twenty percent of the women were abused again but only two persons still remained with their batterer.

c) By their own accounts, the women still required a life-line. Too many were feeling negatively about themselves and their lives and were socially isolated. Follow-up appeared to be indicated.

d) Large amounts of time seemed to be absolutely necessary in resolving the women's issues. Our sense was that at least a year was required to make even modest gains.

e) Informal women's networks in the community were an important source of support and needed to be encouraged.

f) From a more objective perspective, the women were making gains at least on measurements of safety and social independence.

4.4.8 Summary and Conclusions

To summarize the women's experiences at admission to Discovery House, the women were desperate to gain entrance and were virtually in a state of crisis when they contacted the House, which was further exacerbated by the move and the admission processes. The women felt that they needed considerable support at this time, preferably twenty-four hours a day. Those women from emergency shelters did not experience the same warmth and support they received from both staff and other women at the emergency shelters. At the end of their first week of admission they were feeling lonely, fearful, and isolated.

By midway the data speak to the settling in of a sober reality for the women. The fundamental issue of to return or not to return to their batterers plagued half of the women and accounted for half of them not being able to plan. Those who reached a decision about their batterers stated they were making modest progress. In other words, the decision was pivotal in their lives and needed to be addressed before benefits accrued from the programs.

At termination only 15 percent of the women left under positive circumstances. They made the decision themselves and were happy about it. Almost half of the women left in the same state in which they arrived - crises. Thrown out, forced out or clandestinely returning to their batterers highlighted the continuation of their ongoing duress. In spite of these trials, the women still felt they had benefited from their stay at the shelter.

Six months later we found the women still on the move, faced with poverty, repeated abuse for some, and harassment for others. Sixty-three percent of the women had established relationships with former residents. Over half of the women maintained informal contact with the shelter six months later. Eighty percent of the women felt their stay was beneficial.

We can only conclude that even when shelter life was fraught with trials and tribulations, it was still a haven in a storm no matter how uncomfortable the haven. According to our data, only 20 percent of our follow-up sample were battered again. As well, the women's fear levels had significantly diminished, they had more internal control and had increased their level of social independence. Change had definitely occurred suggesting that the shelter did perform a vital function. The data, both qualitative and quantitative, strongly indicated that a second stage shelter could facilitate the termination of the battering cycle.

Having made this observation, the shelter system could do more to ease the burdens of the women. In light of our findings, a multistage shelter which served women in crisis as well as women who required longer protection would alleviate a number of the problems the women identified. A single administration of both an emergency shelter and second stage shelter is another alternative. Safe apartments or townhouses with on-going outreach from an emergency shelter may be another possibility. The facts were, that moving continually (five times on average in this study) was an ordeal both for the women and their children as was going through the admission processes. Adjusting to new staff, new women, and a new facility and leaving old friends behind was equally unpleasant. Since support was one of the most important needs of the women, it seemed unproductive to move them away from the resources as soon as they were established. The fact that the women kept going back to the emergency shelters for groups and individual counselling testified to the importance of these relationships and their search for continuity. One facility or a small complex of facilities would also be more sensible in rural areas so that women did not have to uproot themselves and their children from a familiar community to find second stage housing in a far away city.

If a one-stop facility is not possible, it is obvious that relationships between second stage housing and emergency shelters needed to be well developed and well coordinated to minimize the distress the women felt. Information, programs and staff could be shared more freely to promote a sense of continuity. There should be, at minimum, a transition program for the women that would provide twenty-four hour counselling, more volunteer support, and more attention given to safety and security rather than long-term plans. Programs should be dropped for the first three or four weeks. In other words, a duplication of the emergency shelter programs in the beginning would be useful in easing the transition.

To set time limits on second stage housing seemed to be unjustified in light of the women's experiences. If anything was clear to us in this study, it was the enormous amount of time that was required for the women to make modest advancements. Divorces do not happen over night, education takes time and jobs do not materialize out of the air. Healing was a slow and painful process. At best, the women set these processes into motion while at the House but the time frames and the manner in which they were instituted were different because every women was an individual facing unique circumstances. To set arbitrary time limits disavowed the women's individual needs and simply added another pressure.

The critics of the unlimited time approach have suggested that women become dependent on the shelter (noted in Walker, 1979). Dependence, in turn, is defined by not taking responsibility for themselves. No one in our sample appeared to be shirking responsibility for themselves. Re-establishment simply was a slow and halting process that was still in motion six months later. Flexibility around length of stay would appear to be beneficial. Pizzey (1974) believed this back in 1971 and our research indicated that she was correct.

Although it is difficult to discuss treatment models without acknowledging the philosophy of a shelter, here we only comment from the perspective of the women. The needs of the women were definitely counselling and security as they themselves stated. Summarizing the data, the need was for security of place and for counselling that was primarily supportive and factual according to their particular need. Confrontative-type counselling, whether individual or group, was not valued by the women and is supported by the work of Del Martin (1985). They did not want programs forced on them, they wanted choices. This finding supported the work of Loeske and Berk (1981) who studied an emergency shelter. Furthermore, allowing a woman to regain her own power in the therapy relationship seemed antithetical in a forced situation (Rosewater, 1984). The data also indicated that women needed to explore the decision to leave or stay with their batterers early on in counselling. Finally, the numbers of programs needed to be closely guarded to avoid overload.

In reference to services on site, on the basis of the women's comments, we concluded that day care was highly valued in helping the women through the course of their stay. The day care must be of a high quality, however, if it is to be truly useful. Some of the children did have unique needs that required skillful attention.

According to the women's overall experiences, we concluded that the hierarchical model of organization evidenced at Discovery House was detrimental to the women. Hierarchical models precluded multiple leadership, did not encourage mutuality and forced the women to continually defer to the authority of others - a "rather poor model for battered women" (Schechter, 1982:98). The experiences of having virtually no say in the running of the House appeared in every set of interviews in the form of displeasure with rules and mandatory programs, complaints of favoritism, the belief that they were being spied upon through the intercom system, and the non-response from the Board when crises arose. That their relationships were frequently strained with other residents indicated to us that a sense of community did not exist. While at Discovery House all of the women had close relationships with at least one other woman but there was not one incident in the entire time of the study where the women came together as a single voice. There were definite attempts, but the leaders were forced to leave in one way or another. A sense of community could not possibly exist within the hierarchical structure of Discovery House because community implied equal participation (Beaudry, 1985).

Finally, with one voice, the women adamantly stated that they preferred living in their own apartments mainly because it afforded them privacy. Fears of social isolation of the women or the forestalling of the development of self-help did not occur because women lived in self-contained units. Too many of the women who went to school or worked and had not participated in the programs still had at least one close friend in the facility. The close network of women at six month follow-up also supported our conclusion. We also concluded that this network of women helping themselves should be encouraged within the community context after their stay at the shelter.

In a composite review of the women's experiences, we would strongly advocate for more safe housing that was not locked into the current two-step emergency/second stage approach. Alternative models of housing need to be considered which are sensitive to the realities of the women's lives - the instability and lack of continuity. We would urge that time limitations be used with care and that the programming and organizational structure allow for individuation and self-determination.

CHAPTER V: THE CARE-GIVERS VIEW

5.0 Introduction

In this chapter we document the experiences of the board, the staff, the volunteers and collateral agencies involved with Discovery House. We note that there was a changeover in board and that staff and volunteers came and went over the twenty-one month time period of the study. We discuss each group separately and in the conclusion of each section identify major themes.

5.1. The Views of the Board

The exact number of board members at any given time fluctuated over the period of the study between twelve and fourteen members. We were able to interview seventeen people who served on the board. Three board members who were appointed never went to a meeting and therefore, felt that they could not contribute to an interview. Over time, most of the board members were professionals--doctors, lawyers, accountants, nurses, social workers, clergy, engineers and police. There were housewives, businessmen and one ex-resident of Discovery House.

5.1.1 Becoming a Board Member

Becoming a board member at Discovery House appeared to be a function of a number of factors. Two churches were represented on the board, one because it was part of the founding of the House and one because it made donations. These two groups automatically were granted positions and could choose who they wished. One position also appeared to be permanent for the Rotary Club. The Club had given a donation to the House with the provision that one of the Rotarians sat on the board "...to make sure the funds were being used properly." Of the seventeen board members interviewed, four were from the Rotary, and three were asked to serve on the board by Rotarians. Three board members were asked by the churches to represent them, two were asked by previous board members, three were asked by the executive director, and one by an outside government official and one board member was a founding member. During the course of the study one board member was asked to leave because that person wished to set up a grievance committee.

It was our overall impression that who sat on the board was a function of the board. Board members were not proposed from the general membership of the society.[1] Officers of the board were elected from board members or simply selected by general consensus.

5.1.2 Perceived Roles of Board Members

When asked to describe their roles on the board, there was almost as many roles as board members. Four board members felt they had no role to play, three felt that they contributed financial advice, two brought program expertise and two people brought personnel expertise to the board. Two people felt they brought expertise in the area of building and construction, one person brought legal knowledge and one person brought medical expertise. One person felt that they were an "overseer and peacemaker" and one felt they would develop closer relationships between their organization and Discovery House.

---

[1] Having attended one general annual meeting, pre-selected board members were simply ratified.

In terms of the perceived task of the board, 41 percent of the members saw the role of the board as offering support to the executive director while 35 percent thought their task was to make policy. Twenty-three percent of the board members were not sure about the role of the board (Figure 5.1).

5.1.3 Causes and Solutions to Wife Battering

Again, the board represented wide variations on their views on wife abuse and the solutions. Four board members felt that they really did not know the causes. Three board members identified alcohol as the culprit, four people pinpointed societal values, two believed the woman had a lot to do with it while two noted that it was the result of "immature" men and women. One board member believed that violent behaviour was learned.

Five board members saw the solution to battering through prevention at the childhood level while five saw the solution to be in public education. Four did not know the solutions, one member suggested therapy, one member felt that the woman should leave the batterer and one board member felt that the solution depended upon the "individuals involved."

The board all agreed on the needs of battered women. All members mentioned security, support, counselling and self-esteem. Asked about the needs of children, they all agreed that the children required safety/security, love and counselling. Two board members added that the children needed "positive role models."

Despite the board member's agreement on the needs of women and children, twelve members did not know what the criteria were for admission to Discovery House. Two believed admission was based on need, two that the women must be battered and one board member thought the women had to have a desire to leave their batterers.

5.1.4 Perceptions of Programs

Fifty-eight percent of the board members could not name what programs were available at Discovery House (Figure 5.2a). About 29 percent of the board members thought the programs were excellent and discussed them at great length while 11 percent of the board members could name some of the programs but they were not too clear on what they accomplished. Forty-seven percent of the board members firmly believed that programs should be mandatory so as to instill "a sense of commitment" in the women. If the women did not like mandatory programs, one board member noted, "It was their choice to move in or not" (Figure 5.2b). Seventeen percent of the board members thought mandatory programs probably were not a good idea while 35 percent of the board members would not venture a view because they were not aware of what was mandatory and what was not.

The board members were asked about what changes they would like to see in programs. Six board members, in one way or another, recommended expansion of existing programs and the addition of new

Figure 5.1: The Role of The Board.

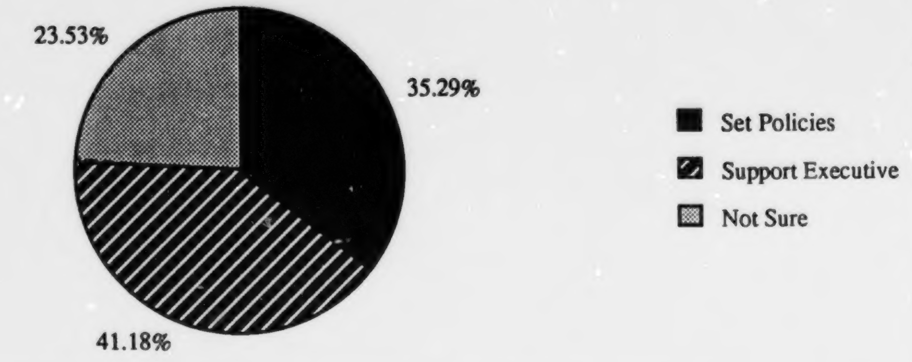


Figure 5.2a: The Boards View of The Quality of The Programs Offered at Discovery House.

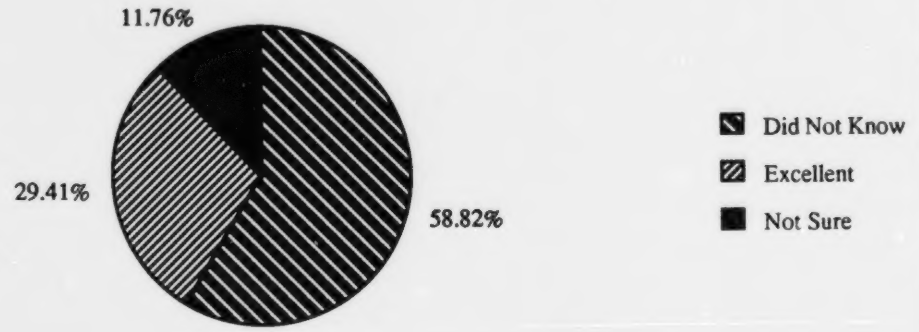
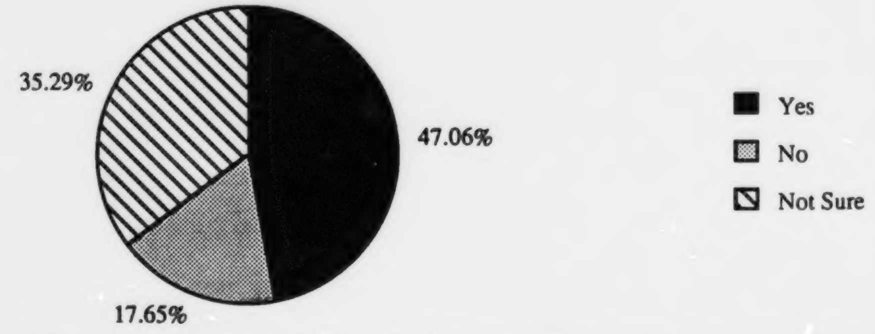


Figure 5.2b: The Boards Views In Terms of Whether or Not The Programs Should Be Mandatory.



programs. These six board members suggested more nutrition, parenting and self-esteem programs and children's activities. One new suggestion was more therapy for the spouses or a support group that worked with both spouses. A children's library was also suggested. Two board members felt that the programs should be more professional and therapeutic, one felt that nothing should be changed, one felt that the executive director should be fired and five did not know what should be changed.

5.1.5 Administration

Six board members believed that the board set the policies of the house, while three believed the executive director carried out this task pending approval by the director of the board. One of these three board members bluntly stated, "It's ass-backwards." Another commented, "The Director runs the board." Two board members thought staff made policy. These two members believed "...staff have a lot of input." One person thought committees made policy. Four board members did not know who set policy. As one board member commented, "I don't know how it is made," or another who stated that there was "...a big lack of policy."

There was considerably more consensus around who made the day-to-day decisions. Ten board members stated that it was the executive director, three thought it might be staff, and two members didn't know. One board member thought the board did this and one member thought it was committees.

Asked about a policy on confidentiality, fourteen board members said they were not aware if there was such a policy. Two board members felt the policy on confidentiality was excellent and one board member believed that the policy "...must be in the policy manual." We could find no policy manual.

5.1.6 Physical Characteristics of Discovery House

Those board members associated with the old shelter commented that the place was unacceptable. To quote one board member "...it's sad that it's such a mess." Eight board members agreed with the assessment. Nine members commented on the new building. These members basically found the building to be attractive but noted numerous flaws. Most felt the building was too small, that security was suspect, that the hill was a major drawback and that the building was "too costly." One board member volunteered that one member of the board had personally pocketed money on the land acquisition for the House and that this was wrong. Our sense was that the construction of the new building was a difficult and trying experience for a number of board members.

5.1.7 Perceptions of the Community

Seventy-six percent of the board members felt that Discovery House was positively regarded by the community-at-large (Figure 5.3). Two board members thought the community did not care and two thought the community simply did not know about the House.

5.1.8 Changes and Challenges

Four board members believed that an important change that had to be instituted was the development of policy. Three board members felt that adjusting to the new building would constitute a major change, two felt there should be a change in the physical dimensions of the new House while one thought there should be more funding. Four board members felt there should be no changes, two did not know what might be changed. One board member was afraid to state a change because it would be viewed "as sour grapes."

The challenges facing Discovery House appeared to be securing more funding (seven members). The reason for more funding was basically seen as a mechanism to become independent of government support, both city and provincial. Although the board felt they had very positive relationships with the community, they saw their second major challenge to be reaching out to the community (five board members). The remaining four board members each saw a different challenge. One board member felt that the agency will have to concentrate on survival. Another "...we might work out a clear definition of what we do...," and the last two that "...we become flexible," and that "...we reach middle and upper class victims." The remaining board member felt that there was no challenge.

5.1.9 Benefits of Being a Board Member

While seven board members felt that they received considerable personal satisfaction through their work on the board, five board members felt there were no benefits. Part of the reason for the latter view appeared to be that the board members weren't sure about what they were contributing. Three board members felt their benefits were related to increasing their knowledge base, one board member saw value in meeting new people and one "...learned how the other half lived."

Seven board members stated that it was not important that they receive recognition while five felt that they did receive recognition and five felt that their work went unrecognized.

Ten of the board members mentioned various problems with the board. Two board members felt that there were too many men on the board and that they controlled the board. For example, one member stated, "The Director of the board is always a man and he makes the decisions." They did not feel this was appropriate for a women's shelter. Two board members felt the executive director "...ran the board" and this was a problem while one board member felt that it was extremely important not to disagree with the executive director under any circumstances. One board member stated that board members should not know what is going on in the House to prevent becoming emotionally involved. At the same time, two board members felt that information was being withheld from them. Another board member noted "the lack of terms of reference" for the board was a serious problem and another felt that the board should secure better funding for staff salaries.

5.1.10 Conclusions

The interviews with the board members suggested a number of themes.

a) The board appeared to be a self-perpetuating system which had little relationship to the rest of the Calgary Family Support Society.

b) The board, at best, was not clear about its mandate.

c) While the board appeared to be aware of the women's needs, they generally were not familiar with the programs being offered at Discovery House and required some form of orientation.

d) The problems with the board appear to be directly related to the lack of terms of reference.

5.2 The Perceptions of the Staff

Twenty-nine staff volunteered to be interviewed over the course of the study. Two interviews were omitted for reasons of confidentiality so that our findings are based on 27 interviews. Fifty-one percent (14) of the employees were permanently employed while 48 percent (13) were on "soft-money" (grants). Almost all of those on grants were students. All types of positions were covered by the interviews and some two or three times, given the turnover of staff over the twenty-one months. The interviewers attempted to solicit their views on the women, the programs, administration, the community and changes that might be made.

5.2.1 How the Staff Came to Discovery House

The majority of staff appeared to be known to the agency before they ever worked there. Forty-eight percent or thirteen staff over the twenty-one months became involved at Discovery House by knowing someone at the shelter (Figure 5.4a). Either a family member already worked there (5 staff), they knew the director of the board (2 staff), they knew the executive director (2 staff), or they knew other staff (4 staff). Approximately 30 percent came to the agency via the newspaper (3 staff), through job agencies (3 staff), through the university (1 staff) or they were requested to come by Discovery House (1 staff). Twenty-two percent started at Discovery House as volunteers and were subsequently hired. If the volunteers, who became employees, are added to those who knew someone at the shelter, almost 70 percent of the staff were known entities before they commenced work at the shelter.

Everyone interviewed noted that they had gone through a formal hiring process and were interviewed either by the executive director, the house manager, the group therapist or a combination of these people. About 30 percent of the staff had degrees (nursing, social work, psychology), some had special certificates primarily in childcare and others had taken some special training through workshops on various types of therapies (Figure 5.4b). Our perception was that there was a definite move towards professionalism during the study, primarily in the area of childcare. We also noted that there was considerable uncertainty about job descriptions. Thirty-three percent of the staff noted that their roles were not always clear--that they

Figure 5.3: The Boards Perceptions of The Community.

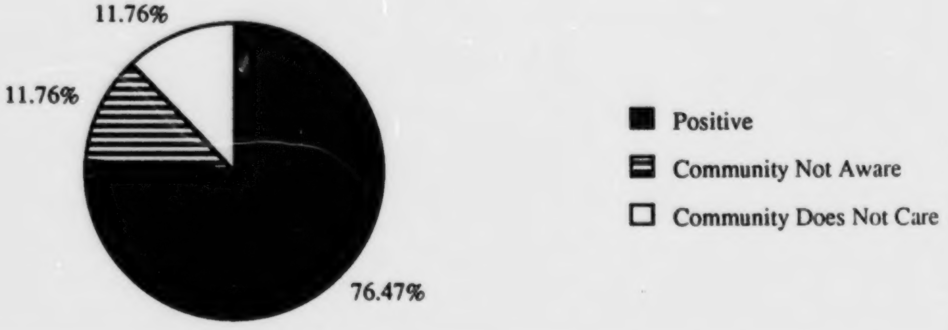


Figure 5.4a: The Staff - Hiring Processes.

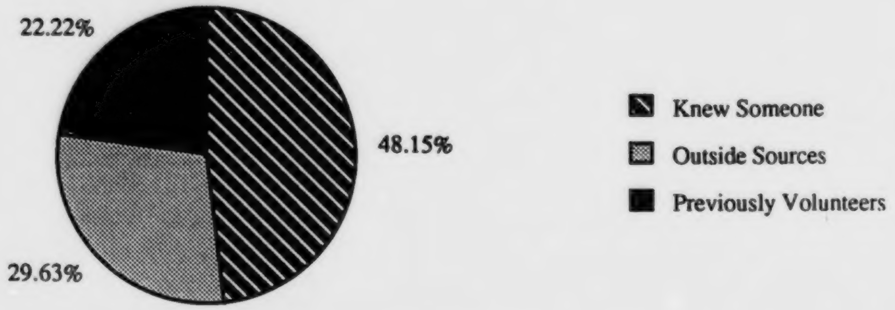
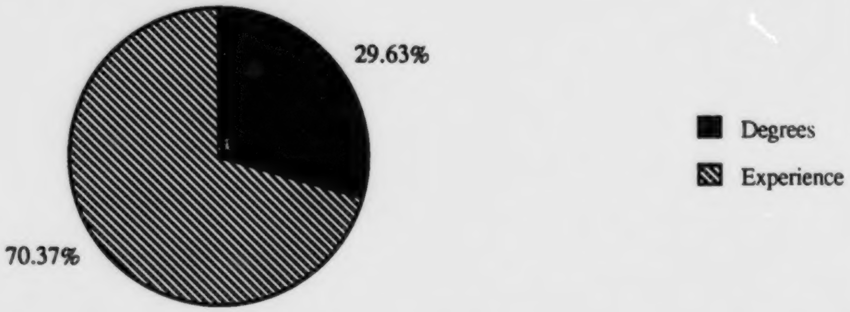


Figure 5.4b: The Staff's Qualifications.



overlapped with others, duplicated others or were vague and subject to change.

5.2.2 Views on the Solutions and Causes of Wife Battering

Twenty-two percent of the staff felt that violent behaviour was learned behaviour while 18 percent believed that the cause could be attributed to the men. Men could not "manage anger," they were "immature" or could not deal effectively with "pressure." Another 18 percent believed that societal support of violence was the fundamental cause. Eleven percent felt that wife battering was extremely complex and a result of a number of factors. The remaining staff who offered an opinion felt that battering was the result of low self-esteem (1 person), was the result of financial hardship (1 person), and two staff (7.40%) believed it was the wife's fault. Fourteen percent of staff did not know the cause of wife abuse (these staff were mainly students).

The major solution to wife battering according to staff (22% or 6 staff) appeared to be intervention with children to prevent the next generation from being abusive. Eleven percent of staff believed that women should be educated, another 11 percent that counselling was the answer and yet another 11 percent felt that wife abuse should be treated as a major crime. Eleven percent felt that the solution depended on the individual. Seven percent indicated that societal values had to be changed, while another 7 percent felt that women should be helped to be financially independent. One staff (3.7%) believed that professionals required education and one staff stated "...women should learn not to be wimpy."

Basically, the staff appeared to subscribe to any one of the major paradigms of wife battering and the concommitant solutions. It was clear that some of the grant people were not that well informed about wife abuse.

Despite the staff's varying views on wife abuse, over half (59%) of the staff felt the women's greatest needs were for support, security and control over their lives which was fairly similar to what the women themselves thought they required. Eighteen percent of the staff believed the women needed to shore-up their self-esteem. Seven percent felt that the women had to learn not to manipulate. Four (14%) other staff mentioned four different types of needs. One staff believed that women needed less counselling, another that integration into the community was most important, another that they needed to deal with their anger more than anything else and, lastly one staff stated that every woman was different and, therefore, her needs would vary.

Over half of the staff (55%) agreed that children required safety, normalcy and security. The remaining staff mentioned a need for love and discipline (4), a need to express their feelings (2), counselling (1), education (1), better child care (1), to be with their mother (1), or to be like any other healthy child (1). One staff did not know what the children needed.

5.2.3 The Staffs' View of Programs

About 37 percent of the staff felt that the programs were excellent and required few, if any, changes (Figure 5.5a). Sixty-two percent of the staff believed that the programs could use some improvement. The suggestions for improvement basically fell into three categories--more individual choice, better quality programs and more normalization.

By individual choice, staff were primarily suggesting that the women should have a larger range of programs to choose from because their needs varied substantially. One staff member symbolized this view. "Women are at different stages and need different things. We should program according to who is with us." Suggestions for broadening the choice included "career planning", "dance and music therapy," "nutrition," "women in the workplace," and "use of leisure time." The general idea appeared to be that programs could be added and dropped according to need and that women picked what worked for them.

The second set of recommendations about programs had to do with upgrading the skills of staff and broadening their methods of intervention. Staff thought the programs were conceptually suitable but not so fine in the implementation. The salient themes here were that staff were running programs that they were not qualified to run or that only a very narrow range of therapies, if any, were used in individual counselling and in the groups. This seemed to indicate the drive towards professionalism.

Lastly, some staff strongly believed that an abnormal environment was operating at the House. It should be "normalized." As one staff noted, "...there are too many programs, that's not normal in an ordinary apartment block..." or another staff noted "...night programs take mothers away from their families...this doesn't happen in the real world."

Asked about mandatory versus voluntary programs the staff did not agree (Figure 5.5b). Thirty-three percent of the staff felt that the programs should be mandatory mainly because, "it showed the women's commitment..." or "...no one would come otherwise...." In our historical search as to why programs should be mandatory we were told they were mandatory to ensure that women showed-up, usually when outside consultants were involved. "It was embarassing if only one woman appeared for a program and since there were only seven women in the House at the time, this was a real fear."[2] Over time, this rule appeared to have evolved into a measure of good faith on the part of the women.

Twenty-nine percent of the staff did not feel programs should be mandatory (Figure 5.5b). The reasons were primarily that the women were "...mature and could make their own decisions" as one staff member commented. Another reason was that women were at different stages in their lives and "...did not always need what was offered." Twenty-two percent of the staff had no comment in this area and 14 percent were unsure. Those who were unsure were worried that perhaps the women would not "...get a second opinion..." yet "...their rights should be respected."

---

[2] A former staff member who worked at the House in the early days and prior to the study told us this. This reason also appeared in one of the interviews of staff who had been there longer.

5.2.4. The Staffs' View of the Physical Setting

Five staff members (18%) worked in the old shelter. "Dump" seemed to be the best descriptor the staff had for this facility. Fifty-five percent of the staff saw the new building as "beautiful," "well located," "modern and pleasant," "good to work in." Almost 26 percent of the staff had complaints about the new building. Like everyone else, they did not like the hill, they felt the office space was extremely cramped, the play areas for children were too small, the childcare was too small and four felt that security needed improvement, particularly for the ground level suites. Notwithstanding these complaints, the staff appeared to genuinely appreciate the new facility and felt that it added to the pleasure of their work. In particular, many staff noted a positive environment was a boost for the residents as well.

5.2.5 Staffs' Views on Discovery House Relationship to the Community

By and large, 66 percent of the staff believed that Discovery House was well accepted by the community in general and by some agencies in particular (Figure 5.6). Thirty-three percent of the staff members felt that there were some problems. Of these staff members, the common problem seemed to be that Discovery House had difficulties with high staff turnover and outside groups viewed this negatively. One staff suggested that community groups "...are hesitant to donate money because they are not sure where it goes."

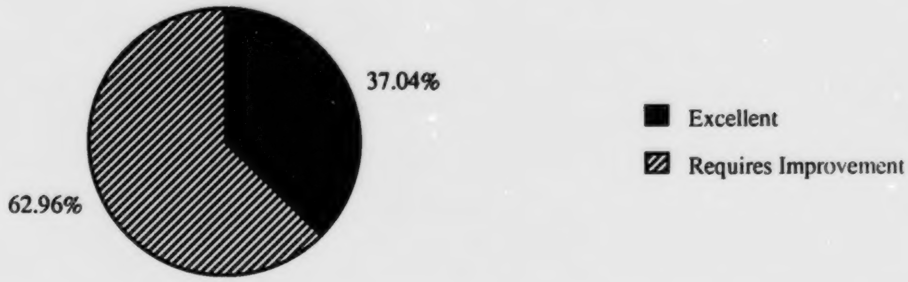


Figure 5.5a: The Staff's Views In Terms of The Quality Of The Programs Offered At Discovery House.

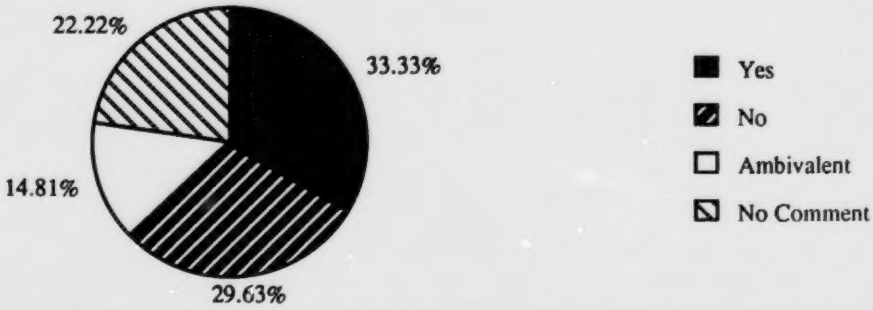


Figure 5.5b: The Staff's Views On Whether Or Not The Programs Should Be Mandatory.

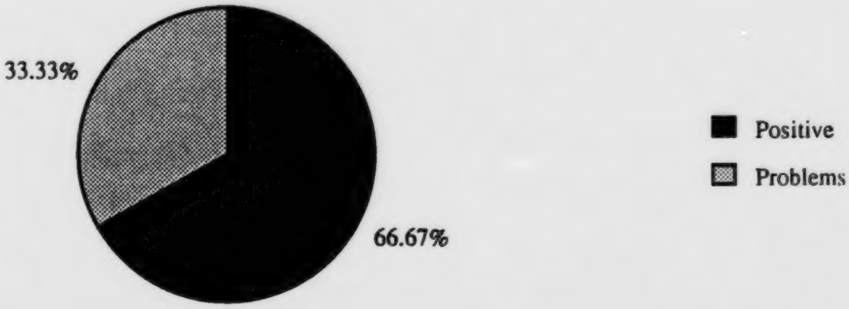


Figure 5.6: The Staff's Perceptions of The Community.

Two staff members felt that the community simply did not care about Discovery House.

5.2.6 Administration

Staff members apparently were not in unison on who made policies. Forty percent of the staff answered that they were not sure who set policy while 25 percent believed that the board most likely set policy (Figure 5.7a). A further 25 percent of the staff stated that the executive director set policy while 7 percent believed that the executive director, the house manager and the group therapist actually set policy.

On a day-to-day basis, 59 percent of the staff believed that the executive director made the decisions (Figure 5.7b). Twenty-nine percent of the staff believed that day-to-day decisions were made by various combinations of the executive director, the house manager and the group therapist. One staff person felt that the house manager made all the decisions and one staff member did not know who made these decisions. Seven percent of the staff members thought that staff had some input in decisions at staff meetings.

A representative comment by staff was "...staff are not allowed to make decisions, it would mean taking a risk."

Eighty-five percent of the staff unequivocally stated that there were serious problems with how the House was run (Figure 5.7c). Eleven percent of the staff felt there were no problems at all and one staff member said there certainly were problems but they were afraid to comment upon them. Because each staff person mentioned at least

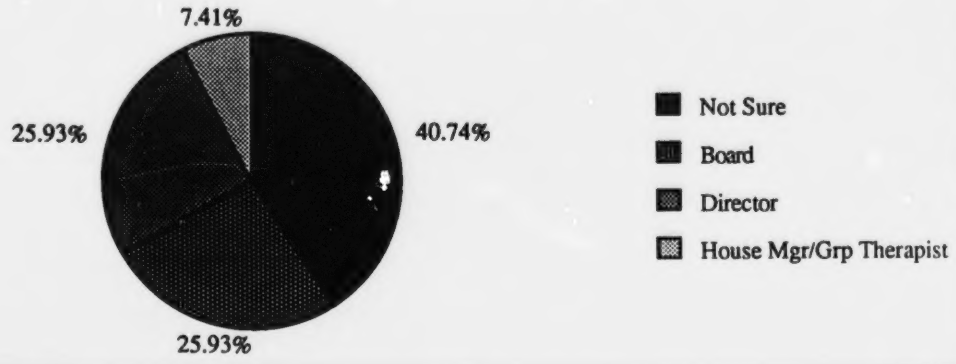


Figure 5.7a: The Administration of Discovery House - Who Sets Policy.

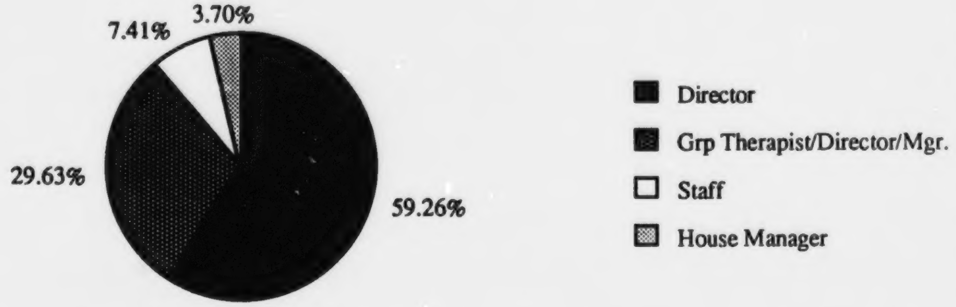


Figure 5.7b: The Administration of Discovery House - Who Makes The Day-To-Day Decisions.

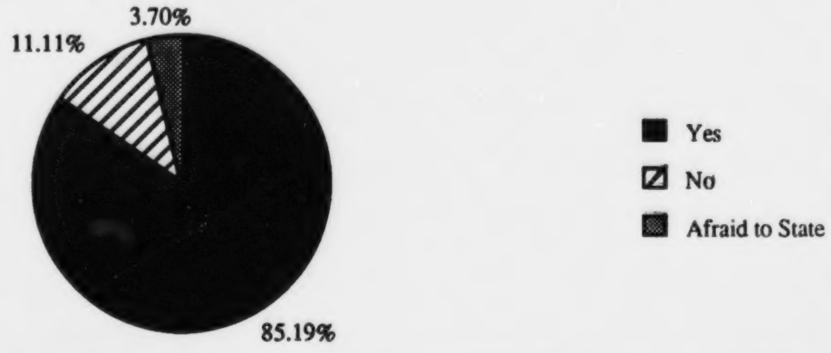


Figure 5.7c: The Administration of Discovery House - Management Problems.

four or five different problems, we counted how often the problem was mentioned as a rough indicator of consensus (Figure 5.7d).

Problems with management were mentioned eleven times. The issues here appeared to be a case of receiving no support in the sense that one was not trusted to make a decision; the lack of meaningful feedback on performance; the dilemma of not being able to disagree for fear of loss of job; and the inaccessibility of the executive director.

Communication problems were brought up ten times. The general themes here seemed to be conflicting messages, twisted messages, inconsistent messages, and the control of information. Confidentiality as a problem surfaced in conjunction with communication. Staff felt that it was not observed for both themselves and the residents. One staff said that they had done something wrong and it was "all over the building before they knew" or "We'd be exposed for all to see at a staff meeting."

Manipulation of staff was mentioned nine times. The staff saw themselves as being manipulated against each other. As one staff noted, "We would each be singled out and asked to comment on the behaviour of another staff...." The staff also noted that information going forward to the board was manipulated to make the agency appear to be troublefree. The team approach was, apparently, non-existent. The team was brought up eight times in the sense that staff did not feel a part of a team and they believed that they had little input. Favoritism was mentioned eight times. To quote one staff, "Sometimes favoritism with a staff member comes before proper service delivery of the agency...."

"Firings" were discussed six times. Staff noted that they were afraid of being fired and as a result they were "walking on egg-shells..." a good part of the time. They also believed that this was harmful to the clients. Finally, "disorganization" surfaced six times. The general theme here was represented best in a staff's comment. "They did not state what they clearly wanted, they kept changing gears as to what they wanted and, therefore, goals and objectives kept changing, thus confusion...."

Some staff felt that "problems of turf" were their responsibility and this was improving through better cooperation between different programs. For example, with the move into the new building counsellors were perceived to be interferring with childcare and vice versa or the House manager was interferring with counselling and so forth. This was, in our view, another manifestation of team problems. There were many other comments, however, they did not appear as frequently. The theme staff were presenting was that they were not trusted, that they had to be controlled and they were not respected as people.

Although staff perceptions can be attributed to general carping, the stress of the job or individual characteristics, the evidence pointed to management. Too many staff, over time, agreed on too many problems, and too many staff left under less than desirable circumstances (see section 1.3.8). Not surprisingly, 66 percent of the staff recommended various changes in management practices. Three saw that there were no changes to be made and four staff members suggested program expansion. One staff felt that the agency required better screening procedures for admission.

5.2.7 Benefits

There was a strong sense of love of job at Discovery House. The majority of staff commented on the "pleasure of working with the women," and the "joy of seeing the moms and kids grow." Only two staff out of the twenty-seven felt there were no benefits.

5.2.8 Challenges for Discovery House

The challenges the staff saw in the future were basically those of expansion. Fifty-five percent of staff members saw expansions in program, more links with the community, more follow-up and a Discovery House II. Forty-five percent saw the major challenge as developing a more effective model of management.

5.2.9 Conclusions

The experiences of staff suggested several conclusions as follows:.

a) Hiring procedures should be reviewed to ensure that the best person for the position is employed. We drew this conclusion because 70 percent of the staff were known at time of employment yet the staff terminations seemed inordinately high. The implications for us were that it was more convenient to hire known persons rather than conduct a far-reaching search.

b) The House needed to settle on some form of organization with specified goals and objectives and clearly defined jobs. The organizational uncertainty was stressful for staff.

c) Mandatory programs for residents should be reviewed with staff to ascertain the benefits and drawbacks and the implications this rule had for 29 percent of the staff who disagreed with them and the 14 percent who were unsure.

d) Grant students should be oriented to the House and provided with basic information about wife abuse.

e) The apparent control paradigm of management (Weiner 1982) appeared to be a serious source of stress for staff.

5.3 The Views of the Volunteers

Thirteen volunteers representing about one quarter of the active volunteer force (at the time of the study) were interviewed.

Five volunteers became involved by responding to an advertisement in the paper, one through the volunteer centre at the university, one through the city volunteer centre, four through a church, one through Katimavik, one through a course at the university (Figure 5.8a). Of the thirteen volunteers, three were involved in recreation, three in babysitting, four in housesitting, three in childcare and three newstarts (Figure 5.8b).

Those volunteers involved in babysitting or housesitting were not that pleased with their roles. The housesitters felt that they were unpaid staff. As one volunteer stated "We are doing the staff's job and thus are volunteering for the benefit of staff, not the women." The babysitters expressed problems with disciplining the children as well as a desire for more direct involvement with the women. It was almost with one voice that the volunteers stated that the New Start program was "excellent."

All thirteen volunteers basically saw the cause of wife abuse to be marital dysfunctioning as a result of drugs and alcohol. Ten of

Figure 5.7d: The Administration of Discovery House -
The Types of Problems Noted By The Staff.

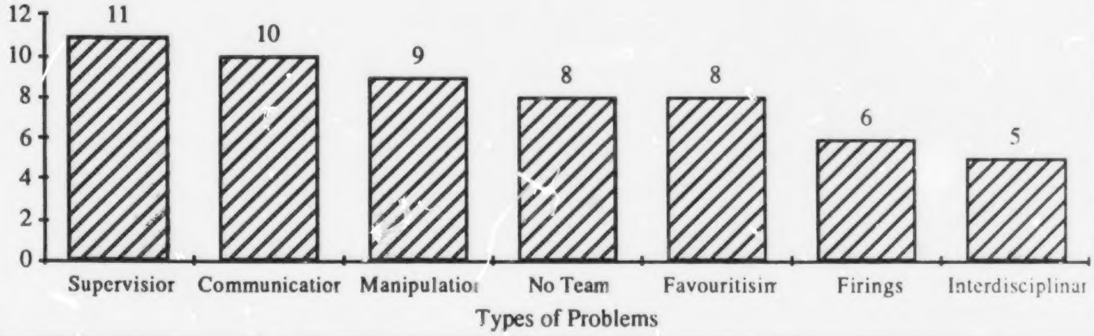


Figure 5.8a: How Volunteers Became Involved in Discovery House.

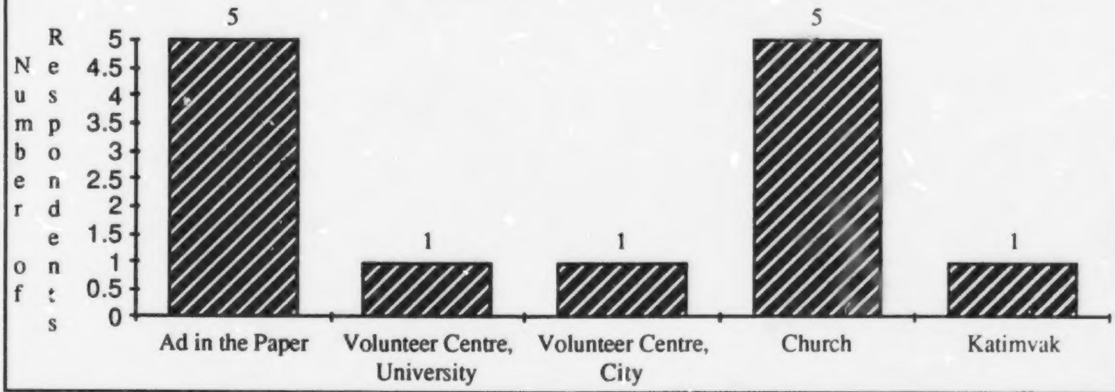
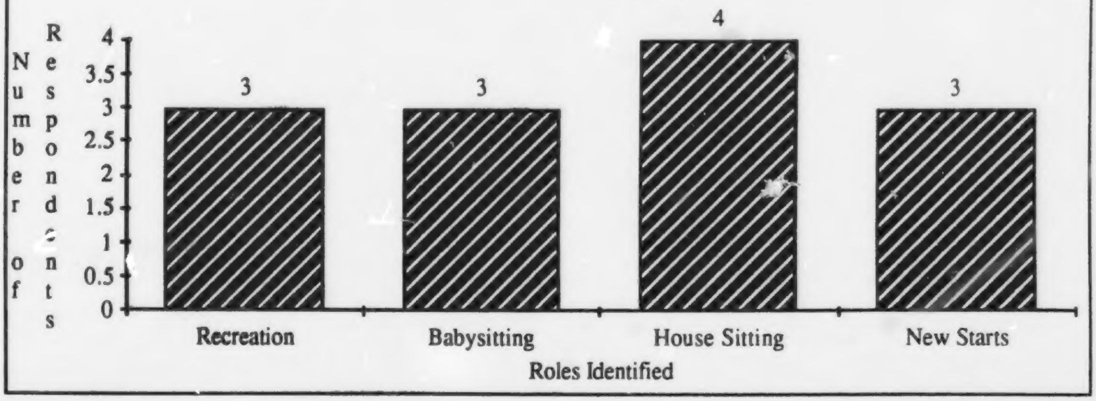


Figure 5.8b: The Volunteers Roles Within Discovery House.



the volunteers felt that shelters would end the problem of wife abuse and three volunteers thought counselling was extremely important. Again, the volunteers were unanimous in their beliefs that the women needed security and support. The children were a problem for them because eleven of the volunteers felt the children were in "desperate need of discipline" to quote one representative comment. Two volunteers thought the children needed to learn to play non-violently.

Most of the thirteen volunteers guessed that the board set policy and that the executive director made the day-to-day decisions. Confidentiality was something the volunteers had not considered although when questioned they thought it to be very important.

The volunteers generally viewed the programs to be adequate with some suggestions for additions. The programs suggested (parenting, self-esteem) tended to be programs already in place so it appeared that as a group they were not that well informed as to what was going on in the House. Mandatory programs elicited considerable debate along the same lines of argument as staff. What the volunteers did add was that if the programs were to be mandatory then attendance should be enforced consistently. One volunteer however, observed that enforcing programs makes it difficult for staff if they are the friend of the woman. "It is difficult to force your friend to a program, or any house rule for that matter."

Longtime volunteers described the old building with variations on the theme of "depressing." The new building was highly regarded, however, eight volunteers did express concern about security in the evening. One volunteer stated, "Security seemed lax" and another suggested that male volunteers should work the nights. The hill was not popular.

Very few (only two volunteers) had heard about Discovery House before and believed it to be the same for the community. Some volunteers felt that if the House was well known, security would be breached, others felt it should be more widely known to access funding while others thought there might be a community backlash if it was known that the House was in the Bridgeland community.

The major challenge stated by the thirteen volunteers was basically helping the women become stabilized and independent while the benefits for them were "contributing something worthwhile" and "personal growth."

The problems the volunteers cited most (ten volunteers) was that they felt peripheral to the whole operation. They did not get enough information about the women and they did not know "what was happening." Some (6 volunteers) thought Discovery House to be very poorly organized. For example, they would be told to show-up at an orientation and no one would be there. Or, they would be asked to house-sit and there would already be a house-sitter on site. Four volunteers noted that staff turnovers were "devastating" to the women and that they did not know how to deal with this problem. Four volunteers felt that they did not get enough orientation generally or specifically for their roles.

5.3.1 Conclusions

The volunteers comments seemed to point to the perennial problems with any volunteer program. These problems were as follows:

a) The volunteers needed to feel that they were an important part of the agency and that they were doing important jobs.

b) There needed to be closer links between full-time staff and the volunteers to help deal with problems re disciplining of children.

c) Volunteers seemed to request more knowledge and more thorough orientation to their roles. Their views on wife abuse tended to support this observation.

5.4 The Views of Outside Agencies

Thirty-five persons were interviewed (representing twenty-five agencies) about different aspects of their relationship to Discovery House. These agencies were chosen by Discovery House. Ten emergency shelters in Alberta were interviewed. Staff at two hospitals (2 persons), the police (3 persons), lawyers (3 persons), provincial and city social services (2 persons), a major funder (1 person), agencies devoted to mental health (2 persons) and private counselling and educational groups (3 persons) were interviewed. We have isolated the emergency shelters for description in some cases because there were the agencies with which Discovery House interacted the most.

5.4.1 Nature and Type of Contact with Discovery House

Figure 5.9 indicates the amount of contact the outside agencies or groups had with Discovery House. As would be expected, the heaviest contact was with the emergency shelters within the city followed by provincial social services, the counselling services and the police. The rest of the agencies had minimal contact.

The nature of each person's contact (35 people) is detailed in Figure 5.10a. Forty percent of the contact involved the referral of clients and 22 percent involved consultation on general matters. Only 8 percent of the contact involved client consultation. A breakdown of the shelters indicated that there was no client consultation (Figure 5.10b). This finding supported the women's view that when they entered Discovery House they had to begin all over again.

Fifty-one percent of the contact was initiated by outside agencies while Discovery House initiated only 20 percent of the contacts (Figure 5.10c). Twenty percent of the contact was mutual. The figures were similar when only the shelters were considered (Figure 5.10d).

In the agency comments, at least twelve different organizations noted that they would like to have more input into Discovery House. For example, the three lawyers felt that they could offer workshops on legal issues which would greatly facilitate the counsellors in advising their clients. One hospital felt very strongly that the male side of the violence story should also be presented to broaden the shelter perspective. Educational organizations noted that they had a lot more to offer as did two counselling agencies. The impression was

Figure 5.9: Collateral Agencies - Amount of Contact With Discovery House.

Emergency Shelters	
Out of Town	
Win House	+36
Interval	0
Odyssey	6
Strathcona	2
Whitecourt	0
Medicine Hat	0
Central Alberta	3
Unity	+24
In Town	
Ex Sherriff King	+52
Calgary Womens' Emergency Shelter	+12
Information Centre	1
Social Services	
City	12
Provincial	+52
Police	+10
Counselling	
Youth	26
Religous	1
Educational	1
Mental Health	6
Legal Consultation	+6
Support Health	1
Hospitals	
The General Hospital	12
Holy Cross Hospital	1

Figure 5.10a: Collateral Agencies (All Agencies) - The Nature of Their Contact With Discovery House.

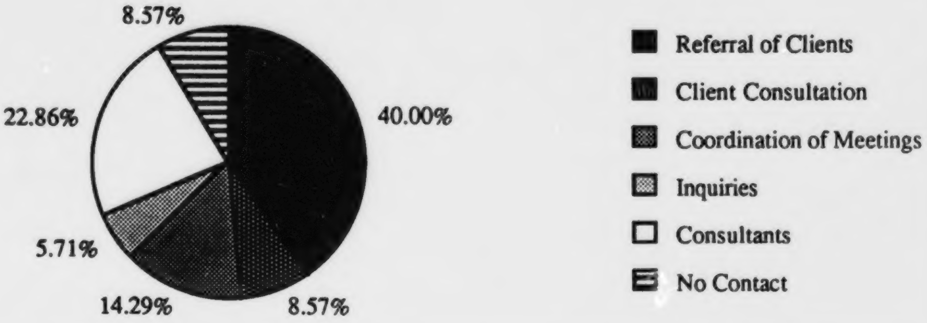


Figure 5.10b: Collateral Agencies (Shelters Only) - The Nature of Their Contact With Discovery House.

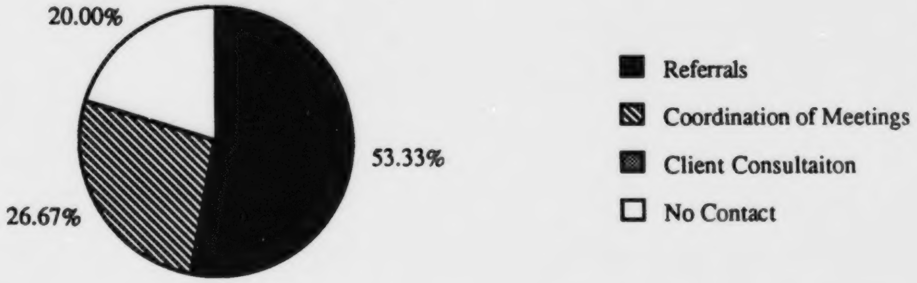
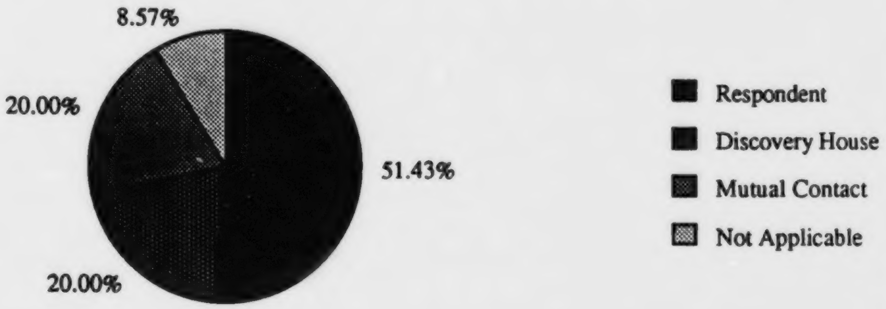


Figure 5.10c: Collateral Agencies (All Agencies) - Who Initiated Contact.



that these agencies or groups felt that they had skills to offer and that they were being under-utilized.

Of all the contacts, 60 percent of those interviewed felt that their contact was professional and very cooperative (Figure 5.11a). Looking at the emergency shelter contact, 40 percent of the staff found the interchange to be easy and helpful while 40 percent did not (Figure 5.11b). Twenty percent of the respondents would like to have seen improved lines of communication between the shelters.

5.4.2 Suggestions for Change

Figure 5.12 indicates the suggestions for change for the overall group of respondents. Fourteen percent of the agencies would like improved communication with Discovery House. The comments here indicated a lack of involvement on the part of Discovery House. For example, some agencies felt that the staff of Discovery House should interact more frequently with them to facilitate the women's move from shelter to shelter. This suggestion was consistent with the women's experiences.

Fourteen percent of the agencies would have liked more clearly stated admission policies. The major concern noted was immigrant women were apparently not acceptable to Discovery House because they did not speak English and, therefore, could not benefit from the programs. Some emergency shelters felt that Discovery House was discriminatory against native people. As one agency stated, "We no longer refer these women. ..." The experiences of the one woman in our sample did indicate some difficulties.

Figure 5.10d: Collateral Agencies (Shelters Only) - Who Initiated Contact.

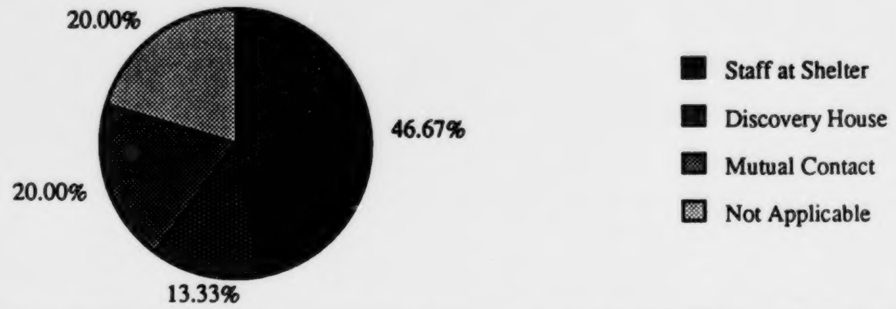


Figure 5.11a: Collateral Agencies (All Agencies) - Quality of Contact With Discovery House.

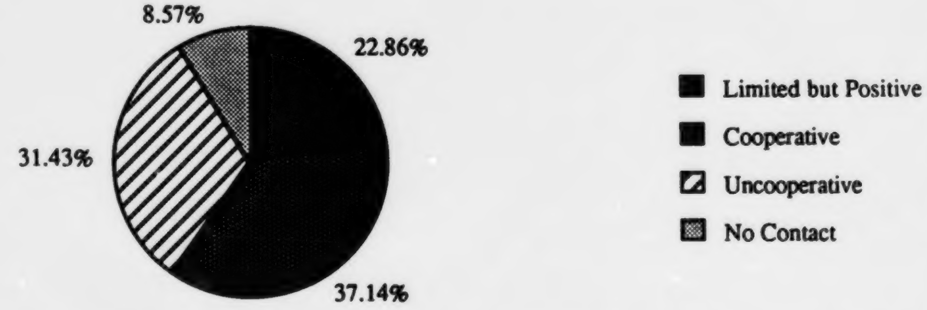


Figure 5.11b: Collateral Agencies (Shelters Only) - Quality of Contact With Discovery House.

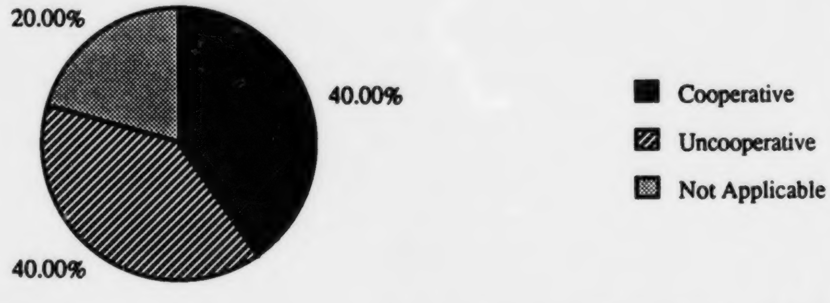
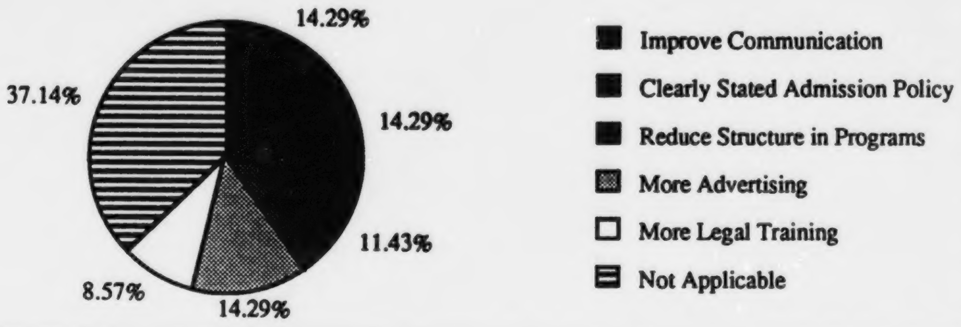


Figure 5.12: Collateral Agencies - Suggestions for Improving Discovery House.



Another 14 percent of the respondents felt that Discovery House needed to advertise broader and disseminate information. A number of the out-of-town agencies made this suggestion because they felt they did not have enough information for referrals. As one agency noted, "the women are reluctant to make a transition to a large city." Eight percent believed that the House should offer more legal programs and 11 percent of the respondents felt that the House should become more flexible in terms of rules and regulations. Forty-two percent either saw no need for change or felt that they did not know enough to comment.

The shelters were also asked why women decided to not go to Discovery House once they were apprised of the facility. The out-of-town shelters responded that the move was just too big a leap for the women from a small town to a larger city. The major source of referrals from out of town were from Edmonton, another larger city. These agencies felt that there should be second stage housing in rural areas to accommodate these women's needs. Housing was a very serious problem for rural women.

Within the city, all the respondents noted that women did not go to Discovery House either because they did not require the security, they did not want programs, they do not want to move again after six months, they did not like the rules and regulations or they wished to be independent. These women usually went home, found their own housing, went to the YWCA (single women), moved in with family or went to Horizon West (a secure apartment complex with some apartments for battered women). These reasons simply lent more support to the women's own views as to why they came to Discovery

House--security and counselling. The frustration of having to continually move was also underscored as was an aversion to rules.

In conjunction with these comments, it was also noted that women who returned to emergency shelters (for visits or to stay) after their residency at Discovery House were discouraging other women at the shelters not to consider Discovery House because their own experiences had been negative. This observation brought us full circle since in the admission interviews a number of the women specifically mentioned that other women at the shelters had recommended avoiding Discovery House. This process of communication created difficulties for the shelter personnel in justifying to the women why they might go to Discovery House. Their only way around this dilemma appeared to be explaining Discovery House to the women very explicitly so that the women could make informed decisions according to their own needs. One of these agencies suggested that the executive director should be fired because of these problems.

The final suggestions, then, were the establishment of more second stage housing that was more flexible and which could accommodate native and immigrant women.

5.4.3 Summary

The data suggested to us the following:

a) Discovery House was under utilizing community resources. The House needed to be more active in networking with outside agencies. The contact was basically community initiated.

b) Relationships, with shelters in particular, needed to be improved in terms of communication, coordination and knowledge of program (e.g., admission criteria).

c) Discovery House needed to disseminate clear information about their programs across the province.

d) The ill-will of some ex-residents towards Discovery House was an unexpected finding in that it had serious implications for future service consumers and outside service providers.

5.5 Summary and Conclusions

The service-providers, by their own accounts, were facing demanding challenges along with the women.

The board basically reported some understanding of the women and their needs as well as those of the children. They rightfully believed that the House was well regarded in the community which was consistent with the collateral agency views. The majority of members were very sensitive to funding issues, a perennial problem for shelters, and although they were not totally satisfied with their new facility, there appeared to be a definite pride of accomplishment. The majority of the board members reported that they had gained considerable personal satisfaction from their term of office.

At the same time, the board was struggling with rather profound issues. They were not entirely clear about who set policies, what the terms of reference were for doing so, and what the policies were about. A little less than half of the board reported their task as supporting the executive director while about a third thought they should be formulating policy. As H. Stein (1985:194) has noted, the true test of the board's assumption of policy responsibility is whether a board rationally determines what is a policy matter and whether they make this decision. By their own accounts the board would not have passed this test. A large proportion of board members indicated that they were informed about the purpose of the organization but they were not familiar with its operation on a day-to-day basis.

The staff were a small self-perpetuating system like the board. Seventy percent of the staff gained entry into the system by knowing someone already on staff. Thirty percent were professionals. The views of the staff about battering were quite different than those of the board, although there was considerable concensus on the solutions to wife abuse and what the children needed. Those board members who were familiar with the programs thought they were excellent, however, over half of the staff felt there should be improvements. The suggested improvements were somewhat contradictory, namely more professionalism or less. The staff were as unsure as the board about policy and it was evident that they had nothing to do with policy formation. They also reported very little involvement in day-to-day decision-making. Whereas the board believed there were very few problems other than funding, staff were very obviously experiencing difficulties with management and the solutions to these problems appeared to be one of the greatest challenges facing the house. Expansion was a major theme for both staff and board.

The volunteers, overall, were a peripheral group and felt that way. Their knowledge of wife abuse needed to be expanded, and they required more training according to their own accounts. There was an underlying theme that the volunteers were devalued by the staff and that they had tough problems to deal with and little help.

The collateral agencies basically had a positive view of Discovery House but they felt under-utilized, they desired better communication with Discovery House and clarification of admission criteria and programs. They, too, hoped that Discovery House would rectify their management problems.

From the caregivers perspective we drew a number of conclusions about the management of a shelter. The data suggested to us that traditional forms of organization characteristic of voluntary social service agencies can quickly become derailed given the conditions of shelter life. The problems we unearthed were not those discussed in the literature. We saw no battles between feminist and non-feminist board members or between board and staff on this matter (Walker 1984). The structuring of the service delivery within professional parameters was not a response to the need for legitimate funding as noted by Schechter (1982) or Beaudry (1985). Problems could not be attributed to the move of professionals to reclaim the area of wife abuse. Starting with the uninformed status of the board, a whole process unfolded that reverberated throughout the House and spilled into the community. This process was predicated on procedures to control the day-to-day life of those working at and living at the House.

In light of the paucity of guidelines for policy making, the board's own accounts of unfamiliarity with programs, and their belief in the executive director, we concluded that the director was forced to make policy. Whatever that policy was, the board usually agreed since they had few alternatives. As Stein (1985) has noted in his studies of voluntary boards, if an executive accepts a policy-directing function permanently, the groundwork for serious agency weakness is laid (Stein, 1985:195). We would support this contention based on the data reported by the women, the staff, the volunteers and outside agencies.

Our conclusion was, that because the executive director was left with all of the responsibility of running the House, to control was one of the efficient ways the multitudinous complexities of agency life could be kept within manageable limits. The control mechanisms were a re-run of the X and Y theory of management (see McGregor, 1960)[3] which appeared to develop out of lack of direction from the board, the exigencies of shelter life (where chaos was the order of the day) and a personal need to control. Control was a quick and efficient mechanism for containing problems without getting at real issues.

The result of this style of management was exactly that. Real issues were rarely addressed. Problems were dealt with in three general ways--a new rule was instituted, a staff was let go or a resident's stay was terminated. The information the board received was measured and meted out by the executive director and usually did not match with what was stated in the staff, the women's and the volunteers interviews and what was observed in the field. The issues were usually placed within a professional context which justified asking people to leave or that they be fired.

The desire to use a professional model was evidenced at Discovery

---

[3] Theory X purports that people have an inherent dislike of work and will avoid it if they can. They, therefore, must be coerced, controlled, directed and threatened with punishment to enforce that they will achieve organizational goals.

House. Proponents of professional service delivery models in shelters have argued that the complexity of the women's problems necessitated this approach and buttressed their argument with the fact that outside agencies have historically failed in meeting the needs of abused women and their children. Critics have retorted that the professional paradigm has always implied pathology of client, expertise of the professional and resulting power imbalances between client and professional. This type of model has been argued to support the underlying processes of battering--a perpetuation of the control and domination the women experienced in the battering relationship. Ferraro (1981) has further argued that "...the alleged formalization and professionalization of the shelter was a guise for promoting individual interest (Ferraro, 1981:170).

The use of professionalism at Discovery House unfortunately substantiated the views of the critics for both the staff and the women. It divided the staff from the women so that there was a we-them relationship, it divided the staff and volunteers in a similar fashion and it led to insularity through under-use of collateral services. The model was invoked against the staff and women to control their behaviour. Psychological buttons were pushed in the name of professional expertise. Staff were either suffering from supposed burnout or there was something inherently wrong with their personalities when explanations were sought for apparent misdemeanors. If the women were problematic they too were labelled with some therapeutic term. The social context of the problem was completely ignored making staff the victims alongside the women.

The outcomes of these processes strongly indicated that the staff were demoralized, the women were needlessly stressed and the volunteers were experiencing the fallout in their interactions with the women. The strong subculture of the shelters insured that the outcomes travelled across the community with serious implications for future consumers.

These observations are not new about boards, executive directors and staff (see Schechter, 1982, Stein, 1985, Patti, 1985). What the experiences of Discovery House indicated, however, was that the unique characteristics of shelter life, and the vulnerability of the staff and the residents could not withstand this traditional approach and the accompanying politics. The outcomes were too costly to the human resources involved.

A board structure which permits all the power to rest in the hands of an executive director and which enhances the development of traditional management structures needs to be avoided. What the evidence suggested was that the board must be informed, they must be knowledgeable about wife abuse, they must know the staff and most assuredly, they ought to know the programs of their agency if they are to effect any leadership role in the policy area.

That size, convenience and chaos could lead to a controlling type of management is also something to be monitored carefully. Our data indicated that the problems produced by a control paradigm far outweighed the benefits for the staff and the residents. The staff were vacating the shelter because the system was inhumane and this in turn was deleterious to the residents. The residents were angry and were leaving when they lost their counsellors or because of rules and regulations.

Whatever structure is agreed upon, it is imperative that contracts between a shelter board, the executive and staff designate areas of control and responsibility with an honest commitment to empower the staff and the battered women.

We did not believe that professional input was not required within the shelter setting. There were too many women in our sample with serious emotional problems and chemical dependencies. The findings indicated that some professional services were required to assist the women in recognizing these difficulties and ensuring that the women received the appropriate services elsewhere. To permit the use of a professional model for the purposes of dominating others, however, was anathema to the conditions that brought the women to the shelter originally and was unfair to staff. Programs and all of their ramifications have to be thoughtfully addressed within the general philosophy of the shelter and the specific objectives to be achieved. Left unattended, it is too easy to duplicate the societal structures that led to the problems in the first place.

CHAPTER VI: THE DISCOVERY HOUSE MODEL

6.0 Introduction

Four hundred and twenty days of field notes were recorded which sampled most formal and informal activities at Discovery House over the twenty-one month time period. Most themes that emerged were supportive of the data collected in the interviews. The day-to-day happenings served to place the interviews in context. At the same time, an overall picture emerged.

Midway through our study, the data appeared to address a tendency of the House to act as if it were under siege, just as the women were besieged by their batterers. Protectionist type behavior patterns, the control of information and outside "leaks," a certain wariness with the external environment and preoccupation with security all suggested to us that the shelter felt that it was undergoing some form of assault. Based on the literature, we believed the attacks might be emanating from funders, the community, the media, the established social service network, and groups that were anti-shelter. Discovery House was only trying to protect itself.

Looking to the community, we found no evidence for this hypothesis. The environment was not hostile, indeed it was very supportive of the House. As the study neared completion, what became evident to us was that we were dealing with an almost "pure protectionist" type model of a shelter sketched out by Beaudry (1985) in her study of the development of women's shelters in Quebec. In this chapter, we will develop this model and provide supporting evidence as to why Discovery House fits into this typology. We go on to describe the implications of this model for both the board, the staff, and the women as they negotiated their lives within this structure.

6.1 Shelter Models

Beaudry (1985) develops a typology of four types of shelters based upon two main ideological orientations derived from the service beliefs of non-feminists and feminists groups. The non-feminist groups usually subscribe to the modern view of traditional charity, that is, the social rights of the dispossessed and the notion of looking after what is, rather than advocating for change. The view is concerned with protection and is basically parallel to the ideological premises of society as a whole. The feminist belief system, on the other hand, is essentially liberationist and maintains that women's situations are partly the product of society's attitudes towards women (Beaudry, 1985: 80-89).

The non-feminist orientation has spawned two types of shelters - the pure protectionist and the legal protectionist models. The pure protectionist model is primarily concerned with providing protection to battered women while ignoring any analyses of what the battering experiences represent at the societal level. The legal protectionists are concerned about women's rights as a mechanism for reforming the condition of women.

The feminist orientation is represented in what Beaudry (1985) labels the moderate liberationist and the radical liberationist type shelters. The moderate liberationist model fosters autonomy by involving women in self-help services and analyzing power relations between men and women. The radical liberationists, described by Beaudry (1985), seek a radical transformation of society and the relations between men and women. The shelter does not serve the women but provides opportunities to share experiences and to take political action.

No typology is ever completely represented in the real world but Discovery House did exhibit a substantial number of the characteristics of the pure protectionist model.

6.1.1 Service Ideology

Beaudry (1985) argues that pure protectionist shelters generally do not have an explicit service ideology. The ideology is usually that of the dominant society which is sexist in nature and which views the family as the basic unit of society. We could find no explicit statement of philosophy in any documentation at Discovery House. We never witnessed any debates about philosophy. We only heard from outside agencies that Discovery House liked to maintain the status quo and that they preferred middle class women.

From our field notes, we found evidence that the dominant values of society were alive and thriving at the House. In particular, the notion of the woman's role in the family was underscored. Traditionally, the home and how it functions is the woman's responsibility. At Discovery House the women were generally referred to as "Moms." Notices on bulletin boards addressed the "Moms." We inquired as to why the women were called "Moms" and were told that this was to remind them of their responsibilities.

The rules and regulations were directed at the women fulfilling their familial and parental responsibilities. For example, women were given directives on what time children had to go to bed, they had to prevent their children from making noise or running in the halls, the women were directed to feed their children breakfast, and they couldn't leave them unattended. If the children were in jeopardy (e.g., left alone), the appropriate child welfare services would be notified (and were on several occasions). Parenting classes were mandatory.

The women were urged to keep their suites clean and these were checked regularly, unannounced to the occupant. In-house meetings usually had a little pep talk about returning vacuum attachments and keeping the laundry areas and common living areas clean or the like.

In staff meetings, the physical appearances of the women drew some attention to ensure that the women were dressed appropriately and the staff were exhorted to dress properly (no blue jeans) so that they served as positive role models.

How the women managed their money and how many times they used the food bank or clothing bank was scrutinized in terms of how well they were managing. To receive a food hamper more than three times while at Discovery House was seen as "food bank abuse" and not paying rent on time was seen as irresponsible and justified the threat of withholding welfare cheques.

The general role model communicated to the women was that they were mothers whose job was to tend to children and clean and manage the home properly. Women who went to school or worked were viewed with concern because they were "not benefiting from the programs," and there was little if any effort to adjust programs to assist these women.

The application of mainstream societal values is argued to be a continuation of the control by staff that was once exerted over women in their homes by their batterers (Beaudry, 1985:90). Beaudry would argue that this is (unknowingly) a case of blaming the victim. Our observations were that if the women did not fit into this model, they were at fault no matter what the extenuating circumstances.

One example suffices to explain how this model worked. One woman was having considerable difficulty in managing her children. There was no doubt that her children had been severly sexually abused which necessitated treatment for them at an outside agency. There was also no doubt that the children had serious behavioral problems. At the team meetings (which clients did not attend), there was discussion carried over three staff meetings that continued to note how ill-behaved the children were, what trouble makers they were, how the mother would not (not, could not) control them and how the mother should be "spoken to" about this problem. The following weekend the children created mischief and the woman was terminated on the spot with twenty minutes to collect her belongings and leave. From our observations, she wasn't helped, she was held responsible.

There were many other examples of this process which supported Beaudry's (1985) analyses and, in each instance, the outcomes of this philosophy never appeared to be very useful to the women involved.

6.1.2 Admission Criteria

Pure protectionist shelters frequently do not have a clear policy concerning the types of women to be admitted. Priorities shift from time-to-time and are vague, such that women with all types of difficulties can be in a shelter at any given time. Discovery House did not represent this in the extreme but there was a drift in admission criteria over the course of the study. Originally, women who were battered and who had children were admitted if there was space. A high risk factor was added along the way. Women in immediate danger would receive priority. Although never clearly enunciated, women with severe psychological disabilities or chemical dependencies were not considered for admission. These women were in evidence in the house, however. Whether or not native and immigrant women were welcome was somewhat hazy. We had heard a number of comments that these women could not "benefit from the programs" because of English problems, although some were admitted occasionally.

The problems of admission criteria were raised in three staff meetings and one in-house meeting. One staff member felt that there were several women in the House who were not battered. More to the point, there was great concern on the part of the executive director that too many women were seeing their batterers and staying with them over the weekends and over night. The question was - why were they at the House at all because clearly they did not require security. One staff suggested that maybe the screening process should be reevaluated. This was ignored.

Instead, an in-house meeting was called with the women to point out to them that they were seeing their batterers too often. The women were told that they had to tell staff in advance when they would be seeing their abusers, so that "the issue could be discussed" with their counsellors and "whimsical behavior" could be controlled. It was further suggested that some women were "abusing the House" because they were seeing their batterers. The question of suitability of the programs for each resident was then raised, and it was concluded that maybe they were not benefiting from the program which was the euphemism of the House for asking women to leave.

Why the women were held responsible for admission criteria was perplexing. What was clear, however, was how global and vague admission policies could eventually impact on the women.

6.1.3 Approaches Used

The clinical or "scientific" approach is not characteristic of a pure protectionist model mainly because staff are not professionally trained and personal experience is viewed to be more valuable (Beaudry, 1985:80). The role model is that for traditional women. Discovery House placed great emphasis on the clinical approach and professional conduct although only 30 percent of the staff had professional training. Discovery House could have been evolving into a legal protectionist type shelter where therapy joins hands with common sense, however, at the time of the study, there was more of the trappings of professionalism than there was substance.

The staff were told on numerous occasions not to befriend the women, and not to take them home or go out with them after office hours. Counselling was to be formal and was to be avoided in the women's apartments. One hour per week of counselling, prescheduled in the counsellors office, was the norm. If the women required help on the weekends, they could call some outside professional service. Confidentiality was the key word. Everything that belonged to staff was under lock and key. There was considerable fanfare about the team approach, which was to meet every week.

All of these factors created the impression that clinical practice was in progress.

In examining the team conferences, however, there was little evidence of assessment and planning or discussions of intervention strategies which are characteristic of professional models. The women were described in concrete terms as to whether they were doing fine, doing poorly, moving in, moving out, attending programs or seeing their batterers. Psychological and social assessments were not apparent at these meetings or in the files. The underlying themes were a woman was doing well if she was faithfully attending programs and not seeing her batterer. Conversely, a woman not faring well was one seeing her batterer, breaking the rules or not attending programs. Any woman who found fault with the programs or rules was seen to be disengaging from the House because they had achieved some kind of independence or, alternatively, they should not have been admitted in the first place because the program was not "benefiting them." The approach to the women seemed to be based on conventional wisdom, despite the professional vestments.

What was disturbing was its use in controlling the women and disavowing their concerns. There were numerous examples where women's genuine concerns were therapeutically translated into personal problems. The classic episode for us was over child care. The women had been lodging numerous complaints about child care (the complaints stated in their interviews). The staff held a special in-house meeting to discuss the women's concerns in good faith. After detailing all the complaints and possible solutions for well over an hour, it was pointed out to the women that most of them had been observed to be "angry women" and that they "were using day care as an outlet." The women protested but the meeting was ended instructing the women that their "unresolved anger" would be a "good topic for support group today."

Our conclusion was that Discovery House fell more in line with the pure protectionist model because a clinical approach was only used superficially and as a control mechanism.

6.1.4 Resident Participation

Beaudry (1985:91) asserts that in protectionist type shelters, participation of residents in the daily running of the shelter is not encouraged. Staff are responsible for service, not the women. The we-them type of relationship predominates between staff and residents.

At Discovery House there was certainly considerable evidence of the we-them relationship. The women actually stated at four different in-house meetings that they felt isolated by staff through all the rules and by staff being unapproachable and always busy. Furthermore, the women actually felt that the staff were spying on the them. The women believed that "they" were talking about them behind closed doors all the time, that they were listening in on them through the intercom system[1] and that they were tape-recording their conversations. The women were so convinced of this process that they actually had the cleaning staff help them break into a staff member's office where they were able to read the communications book (information recorded from night staff to day staff). They later went on that evening to dismantle several intercom systems. From a more pedestrian perspective, suddenly one day the common washroom became the washroom for staff only, which was the final statement.

---

[1] The intercom system was set up such that it was controlled by staff. This gave the impression that staff could listen into the suites, although there was no evidence of this activity.

The only opportunity the women had for participation in the running of the House was at in-house meetings, which were poorly attended, supposedly regular, but usually called when there was a crisis. On only one occasion did the women's views count and that was in the summer when they asked to have parenting classes cancelled and they were. The rest of the time the meetings were used to scold the women for some reason or to "cool them out" if some major problem had occurred.

For example, on one occasion, a woman telephoned another shelter for food hampers because it was a Friday, and welfare cheques had not arrived. This was considered to be unacceptable behavior on the part of the women. An in-house meeting was called and reframed the problem as a lack of budgeting skills on the part of the women.

The transcript of the in-house meeting was as follows:

Resident 1: The food bank downstairs, what is it for?

Resident 2: It wasn't offered to me when I came in and I didn't get a hamper.

Staff 1: Be fair, be independent. We are trying to be fair at Discovery House and at the same time get you ready for independence to be on your own when you leave.

Resident 3: The food bank is available to the general public, not just us.

Staff 1: (Resident 3) can you not make ends meet? Is anyone else having this problem? You have one child (Resident 4), how do you manage?

Resident 4: I find I run short by the end of the month.

Staff 1: What is it that you all want from Discovery House?

Resident 3: We got our cheques on the 25th of September and haven't received another one since then (October 30th). I was told to use the food bank downstairs. I was told by (name of staff) that they would get back to me but they went home.

Staff 1: What did you do about this situation?

Resident 3: Another lady in the House called the emergency shelter and asked for a food hamper.

Staff 1: This other lady called (the emergency shelter) and told them we were hungry at Discovery House?

Staff 2: How many have you had (food hampers)?

Resident 3: One small bag of potatoes and some turnips.

Staff 3: I believe this made the third hamper.

Staff 1: Perhaps, (Resident 3), you need some help with budgeting. Did you attend the meeting today?

Resident 3: I didn't go to the budgeting meeting today, I was too angry.

The overall impression was that there was no real mutual problem solving around communal living. Problems were seen as being individually located rather than being a function of the structure. On at least two other occasions, the women felt that they had to secure outside help to influence the running of the House - once from city hall and once from the board. That the women had to go outside of the House, bespeaks their relationship with the staff. Our observations were that they were powerless.

6.1.5 Centralized Decision-Making

Beaudry (1985:91) suggests that the organizational structure of a protectionist type shelter leads to centralization of decision-making usually in the hands of one person, and usually the executive director. This was fully in evidence at Discovery House as seen in the staff interviews and the procedures for day-to-day management at the House.

That the women made few decisions is already clear. The staff had the same experiences. All mail staff received was routed through the executive director. Telephone calls were carbon-copied and checked by the executive director. Telephone conversations were tape-recorded after 5:00 p.m. and checked the following morning for threatening telephone calls and, by definition, for whatever staff might have said. Although the intake worker was to make decisions about admissions, these had to be approved by the executive director. The executive director usually decided who would leave and who would be thrown out although staff frequently had to implement these directives. If the executive director was not available, which averaged two days a week over the period of the study, the House manager reported all goings on to the executive director on a daily basis.

As noted previously, everything was under lock and key and was in the hands of the executive director or House manager. For example, if these people were not available, the food bank or clothing bank could not be accessed. The conversations staff had with the women were sometimes listened in on without permission, and if staff did make a decision with a resident, it was often times reversed.

Sometimes there were attempts at letting staff make decisions and problem-solve. For example, there apparently were some serious staff problems. Two members of the board met with the staff and the executive director to try and identify the problems (a first and last occurrence during the study). After two hours, the problems could not be fully identified although the behavior of one staff member was continually singled out as being problematic. At the conclusion of the meeting, the final decision was that staff would "try to pull together" for the next three weeks and the situation would be re-evaluated. The following week the alleged offending staff member was fired much to everyone's surprise. When the staff questioned why their agreement had been violated they were told it was a board decision.

In another instance where one board member attempted to exercise authority over the handling of a staff resignation by establishment of a grievance committee, the executive director resigned. As a result of this episode, staff signed a petition on behalf of the executive director who subsequently withdrew her resignation, and the offending board member was asked to resign from the board by the board.

The overall result of centralized decision-making appeared to be inconvenience to both the staff and the women, inconsistency in running the House and a considerable amount of confusion and distress which affected everyone from the board to the women. Real issues tended to remain unaddressed and the same types of problems appeared over and over again.

6.2 Coping Strategies

Given the major attributes of a protectionist type model, we observed a number of coping strategies that the women, the staff, and the board utilized to survive in this type of environment.

6.2.1 The Women's Strategies

We observed four main strategies on the part of the women for coping with the environment in which they lived. There were those who withdrew and avoided any emotional type of investment, those who took a reasonable approach and attempted to solve problems, those who knowingly took risks and violated rules and regulations and those who blamed themselves for what occurred.

The women who withdrew went to their counsellors but basically told the counsellors "what they wanted to hear." They were very careful not to share what was on their minds and what they were doing with their batterers. In group, they attempted to keep a low profile, they attended the educational sessions but did not wish to say much and they were quiet at in-house meetings if they even attended. They appeared to have only one or two relationships with other residents and looked to the outside of the House for their support from friends and the emergency shelters. These women seemed to be the ones who would leave rather suddenly with little explanation. In our discussions with these women, they identified both positive and negative aspects of the House and gave the impression that it was there when they needed it.

Those women who took a reasonable approach believed that they could mutually problem-solve with the staff and the other women. They stated their concerns both in their individual counselling and in group and at in-house meetings. They drew up possible solutions to problems and sometimes tried to speak for the other women. Sometimes they made headway but not very frequently. They were often seen as complaining for no apparent reason. Fellow residents were rarely around to support them officially because they did not "want trouble." These women seemed to be those who were most likely to be labelled as "not benefiting from the program." Our impressions were that this group of women were fairly disillusioned with the House although they also saw many positive aspects of the programs. Their evaluations of Discovery House were therefore somewhat mixed.

The risk-takers were those women who broke the rules and regulations, usually surreptitiously. For example, when they felt they were being "grilled" too often about their batterers when they came home at night, they would simply go out and return through their balconies. Another resident would oversee their children and then it would be her turn another night. These women did not appear to hesitate to ask their counsellors about the counsellor's behavior toward them, nor were they afraid to disrupt the support group or ask for explanations at in-house meetings. Sometimes these women would secretly drink on the premises, have male family visitors and stay out all night if they desired. The risk-takers tended to be very negative about the House and when they were "caught" they were swiftly asked to leave. On several occasions they were not allowed back into the building to collect their belongings and complained bitterly to us about this state of affairs.

There were those women who blamed themselves for any problems they were experiencing. If they were not benefiting from individual counselling or group it was because they were not doing something right. If the educational programs did not seem to meet their needs, it was because they were "overloaded" or the course was "above their heads." Sadly enough, when several staff were fired, these women blamed themselves. They felt responsible and said as much at in-house meetings. By-and-large these women left the House wondering what was wrong with them and, six months later, some of them were still asking the same questions.

There were a couple of other strategies observed, such as being the "staff favorite," telling on other residents, or embracing the program whole-heartedly, but these strategies were fairly rare. Our observations suggested that none of these strategies were particularly helpful to the women in re-aligning their lives. The women who withdrew probably did not have a full opportunity to examine their circumstances, the women who were reasonable were squelched in their bids for independence, the risk-takers needlessly moved from one calamity to the next, and the self-blaming women continued to do what they had already done prior to moving into the House.

6.2.2 The Staff's Strategies

The staff, it seemed, did not have as many venues open to them for coping. We observed three basic coping strategies: those who outwardly conformed; those who tried to be reasonable like the women; and those who left quietly or in protest.

The staff that conformed appeared to do so outwardly. On close examination they were struggling with their need and their desire to work with the women and their need to keep their job. These staff were careful who they talked to, they measured what they said, and were cautious about how they presented information. They had a propensity not to disagree openly at in-house meetings and at team conferences. Sometimes they withheld information about the women at team conferences for fear the women would be penalized, or they would implement directives but try and soften the outcomes for the women. For example, when one woman was asked to leave and was not allowed to pick up her possessions, the staff involved quietly picked up the belongings and delivered them to the woman in question. They overlooked rule infractions when possible and did not follow professional protocols on weekends. These staff members seemed to have a fine line to walk which always left them on guard. They were, however, the true survivors in the agency because they rarely were seen to question the established authority.

Those staff who tried to openly solve problems like the women, used all the vehicles open to them. Issues were brought up at team meetings, at in-house meetings and with the executive director. These staff members seemed to be committed to the values of caring and improving service, however, like the women, their suggestions were rarely adopted. Frequently the authority of the board was invoked to state why something could not be done or why something had been done. Those who wanted to improve things or questioned authority were seen as having "personal problems" (burnout) or they were conducting themselves in an "unprofessional manner." For example, when some staff members wanted to change day care hours to accommodate the women who worked or went to school, the recommendations were seen as being "uninformed" since the women would just use the centre as a "dumping ground." When staff suggested following up women who had left the House, it was suggested to them that they weren't accomplishing their current tasks well enough let alone take on more. When the behavior of a staff member was not in line with expectations, it was usually suggested to them that they had been working too hard, they were too stressed, and burning out. The recommendation was always to take some time off.

A good portion of these staff members simply left because they felt helpless or they felt that they were next in line to be fired. Others left and used their leaving as a protest by going to the board or outside agencies, but to no avail. None of these strategies ever seemed to work because a case was usually built to make these people appear incompetent.

Overall, the experiences of living within the protectionist model seemed to us to be tension ridden, frustrating, and psychologically debilitating for the staff. The impact of the staff leaving had no small effect on the residents as did the inconsistency and unpredictability which the women experienced and which was correctly noted in their interviews, their comments at in-house meetings, and their informal discussions with us.

6.2.3 The Board's Coping Strategies

Although the board apparently had little information about the operation of Discovery House, several board members were consistently called upon to solve rather serious problems, usually concerning staff. Their strategy was generally to follow the advice of the executive director. As reported in Section 6.1.5, when one board member was particularly interested in pursuing an issue, trouble ensued. The norm was for the board to show few signs of independence.

This was not to suggest that there were not any board members who were disturbed by this norm. Some board members told us they had attempted to raise questions diplomatically but these went unheard. Other board members told us that they became directly involved with the day-to-day functioning of the shelter to test their intuitions, but their concerns were usually viewed as those of the uninformed. Other board members quietly resigned while others vowed to replace themselves with "strong" questioning people. There was an overall impression of uneasiness on the part of several board members but they saw themselves as hamstrung by their lack of information and lack of credibility in the area of wife abuse. Their best strategy seemed to be to agree or leave.

6.3 Summary and Conclusions

We have attempted to argue that Discovery House closely resembled the protectionist type model of a shelter outlined by Beaudry (2985). The

House appeared to subscribe to a service ideology consistent with the dominant sexist values in society, the admission criteria were not entirely clear, the intervention approach was not really professional, the residents had little say in running the shelter, and the decision-making rested mainly on the hands of the executive director, all major criteria noted by Beaudry (1985).

While Beaudry's (1985) scheme was conceptual in nature, we were able to make some observations about the consequences of living and working within the protectionist model. Our conclusions were that although Discovery House did assist the women in many ways, the milieu was dangerously close to replicating the conditions of the battering situation, not only for the women but for the staff members as well.

We observed the tell-tale signs of domination and control, the accompanying sense of helplessness, and the concomitant subtle victimization of the women and staff. The strategies developed to circumvent these conditions seemed to exacerbate the process. The more people challenged the authority, the tighter the controls became, and the tighter the controls became, the more people withdrew.

While the consequences were undoubtedly unintended and unrecognized, they were far removed from what Discovery House hoped it was accomplishing. The immediate and urgent demands of the shelter contributed to a reactive rather than proactive approach to problem containment. There was little time to attend to such niceties as philosophy of service delivery, the implications of various program configurations or ways of organizing. The method of least resistance was to change people rather than organizational structures.

The protectionist type model, which seemed to encourage these conditions, therefore does not appear to be beneficial to care givers or recipients of service. The Monroe House model, which leaned more towards the legal protectionist perspective, apparently did not have these kinds of difficulties. The experiences of both the staff and women were reportedly positive (Women's Research Centre, 1980).

This study strongly indicated that second-stage housing was required and that this housing does provide security and promotes independence for the women. The real issue appears to be what form this shelter should take to minimize the burdens of living in the House while, at the same time, facilitating the reorganization of the women's lives. We would conclude that the protectionist type model was more of a hindrance than a help and that other models based upon an explicit non-sexist philosophy and parallel forms of organization should be seriously considered by Discovery House. In so doing, we would recommend more participation on the part of the board, the staff, and the women in a total re-evaluation of their facility.

CHAPTER VII: CONCLUSIONS AND RECOMMENDATIONS

7.0 Overview

The purpose of this project was to explore the experiences of those involved in providing and receiving services in a second stage shelter for battered women and their children. Second stage housing is believed to provide a safe and secure environment where abused women and their children can have sufficient time to address the complex problems that they face. In particular, we were interested to know the women's views of their needs and their day-to-day experiences with programs, staff, other residents and community agencies. At the same time we explored the experiences of the staff, the board and the volunteers, and the relationship between the shelter and other community agencies.

The research design employed was consistent with the qualitative research tradition and spanned a twenty-one month time frame from February 1984 to October 1985. Several methods of data collection were utilized in an attempt to achieve validity and reliability. Of the possible seventy-two women who could have participated in the study, sixty-three women completed a biographical questionnaire which provided a composite sociodemographic picture of the women using the house. A set of semi-structured interviews were administered to the women at four points in time: (a) at the time of admission to the House (n = 67); (b) at the mid-way point of their stay (n = 34); (c) at the time of their discharge from the House (n = 45); and (d) six months after leaving the program at the House (n = 30). A more objective set of scales which tapped their level of fear, their degree of social independence, and their degree of internal control and degree of battering were administered to the women at time of admission, at termination and six months later.

A set of semistructured interviews were administered once to the staff (n = 27), board members (n = 17); volunteers (n = 13); and collateral agencies (n = 25), and participant observation was used to detail the day-to-day activities of the House.

7.1 Conclusions

7.1.1 The Women's View

The sociodemographic profile indicated that the women using Discovery House were no different than any other group of women using shelters. The women who came to the House were coming because they required a safe place, some counselling for themselves and their children, and because they had few options available to them. They were physically (71%), psychologically (18%), and sexually abused (3%). Eighty percent of their children had witnessed the abuse and 40 percent of these children were themselves abused. The women lived in fear for themselves and their children, and had attempted, on average, to leave the abusive relationship five times before they arrived at Discovery House. Because of the fear of their batterers and their lack of choices, the women appeared to be in crisis at the time of admission. The admission processes served to aggravate the sense of crisis as did the actual moving from shelter to shelter. The majority of the women in the sample came directly from emergency shelters (88%) and this tended to color their perceptions of the House in terms of their counsellors, the other residents and the general atmosphere. Many of the women reported warmer relationships and more caring environments at the emergency shelters. At the time of admission the women reported that they would have liked twenty-four hour counselling to be available. At the end of the first week at Discovery House they were feeling confused, lost and let down.

As the women moved to midway in their stay, they became somewhat disenchanted with Discovery House. They were having difficulties with the rules and regulations and mandatory programs. The most important issue, however, seemed to be whether or not they had made the decision about their relationship with their batterers. With some kind of decision in hand, the women felt they were making modest progress and could use the programs. Those who could not make the decision were stalled and did not feel they were benefiting from the programs.

At termination, 15 percent of the women left under positive circumstances. The rest of the women left because of rules and regulations, they were forced out, thrown out, their time was up or they were clandestinely returning to their batterers. The overall sense was that these women were in crisis again at termination.

Six months later, we found the women still on the move, faced with poverty (50%), repeated abuse for some (20%) and harassment by their batterers for others (42%). The majority of the women were unemployed, they had moved three times on average during the six-month period and almost half of the women were feeling negatively about themselves and their circumstances. Over half of the women maintained informal contact with the House and almost two-thirds maintained close relationships with ex-residents of the House which were characterized by mutual help and support.

The recurrent themes in all interviews were that the rules and regulations and mandatory programs were unwanted burdens. The most valued program was individual counselling and the most valued service was the in-house day care for children. Generally, the women felt that a six-month stay time limit was artificial and should be more flexible to account for individual needs. Their views on community services remained consistently positive across time although living on welfare was frequently noted to be a demeaning experience. The volunteer programs were consistently viewed positively in principle but never quite worked for them individually. With one voice, the women extolled the value of living in self-contained apartments because of the privacy afforded them. At each time point the women felt that both they and their children had derived some benefits from their stay at Discovery House.

7.1.2 Objective Analysis

Of all the women in the study that were tracked, either directly or indirectly, 35 percent went on their own while 38 percent immediately or eventually returned to their batterers. Fifteen percent were missing and 12 percent were still at the House at the conclusion of the study. Of the women interviewed at follow-up, only 20 percent were battered again, however, 42 percent were still harassed by their batterers. Why the women directly returned to their batterers was not entirely clear, however, when we examined this group of women more closely the evidence suggested that most of them were involved in some kind of counselling with their batterers while at the House. There seemed to be some hope that the context of the relationship would change and that this had been their goal all along. Of those women who lived in the community for approximately three months and then returned to their batterers, the evidence seemed to suggest that those women were having a very difficult time coping with the problems of being a single parent or their batterers were pressuring them directly or through their children.

While 85 percent of the women were on welfare at midway 50 percent were on welfare at six months follow-up. Forty-four percent were using at least one service at midway but at follow-up 56 percent were using one service. There was some progress in terms of becoming financially independent and a general move to greater usage of community services once they left the House.

The four scales administered to the women at time of admission, at termination and at follow-up suggested that the House was accomplishing several important tasks that were consistent with the women's needs. The fear scale indicated that their fear levels significantly dropped from the time they entered the House until the time they left although the levels did not diminish from termination through follow-up. The gain was made at the House. The women's level of social independence also significantly increased from time one (admission) to time two (termination) but not from time two to time three (follow-up) suggesting that the House might have had some influence in promoting social independence. That there was no significant difference from time one and time two and time two and time three on the Rotter Scale of Locus of Control (1966) strongly suggested that this was an accumulative process over time because the change occurred from time one to time three. The rules and regulations as controlling factors at the House might partially explain this finding, however, this was not clear. The Conflict Tactics Scale showed no significant change and we believed this to be an artifact of what the scale measured since we know that only 20 percent of the women were battered again. However, the scale may have been reflecting the verbal aggression and harassment the women seemed to continually experience as a result of the ongoing contact they had with their batterers throughout the study.

As the women noted, they had made modest gains and the scales appeared to support their views. The House was indeed performing a vital function.

7.1.3 The Care Givers Views

The interviews with the board indicated that they were a self-perpetuating system which left little room for other members of the Calgary Family Support Society to participate on the board. At the time of the study, board members were mainly business men, housewives and some professionals representing the police, social workers, doctors, lawyers, accountants, engineers, nurses, and the clergy. The board demonstrated some understanding of the women and their needs as well as those of the children. However, they were not entirely clear about who set policies, what the terms of reference were for doing so and what the policies were about. A little less than half of the board reported their task as supporting the executive director while about one-third thought perhaps they should be formulating policy. Most board members seemed to be aware of the mission of the shelter although the majority were not familiar with programs or day-to-day practices at the House. Overall, the board demonstrated little independence and mainly answered to the executive director.

The staff were a small perpetuating system like the board. Seventy percent already knew someone at the shelter before they ever officially worked on the premises. Thirty percent of the staff were professionals. Like the board, the staff were not sure about policy formulation and reported that the executive director made most of the day-to-day decisions. Over one-half of the staff felt programs could be improved but they disagreed about these improvements. Some staff desired more professionalism in the delivery of service and some wanted less professionalism.

The overwhelming problems for staff were related to management. Eighty-five percent of the staff noted problems that were related to a control paradigm of management. The theme staff were presenting was that they were not trusted, their behavior had to be controlled and they were not respected as competent people. The greatest challenge for them was to untangle management problems.

The volunteers saw themselves as a peripheral group and appeared to want more meaningful involvement with the residents. Their knowledge of wife abuse needed to be expanded and they required more training. There was an underlying theme that the volunteers were devalued by staff but that they required the help and support of staff to deal with a number of tough problems for which they were ill-prepared.

The collateral agencies basically had a positive view of Discovery House but they felt under-utilized, they desired better communication with the House and clarification of admission criteria and programs. Some outside agencies (mainly emergency shelters) were also experiencing the effects of the management problems at Discovery House through ex-residents who returned or visited the emergency shelters and who reported negative information about the House.

In summary, starting with the uninformed position of the board, a whole process unfolded that reverberated throughout the House and spilled into the community. This process was predicated on procedures to control the day-to-day life of those working at and living at the House. What the experiences of the House indicated was that the unique characteristics of shelter life, and the vulnerability of the staff, volunteers and residents could not withstand a control paradigm of management. The outcomes were too costly for the human resources involved.

7.1.4 The Discovery House Model

When all data sources were considered, it was concluded that Discovery House closely resembled a "pure protectionist" type model of a shelter outlined by Beaudry (1985). The House appeared to subscribe to a service ideology consistent with the dominant sexist values in society, the admission criteria were not entirely clear, the intervention approach was not truly professional, the residents and staff had little say in the running of the House and the policy formulation and decision-making rested mainly in the hands of the executive director. Although Discovery House did assist the women in many ways, the milieu was dangerously close to replicating the conditions of the battering situation, not only for the women but the staff as well. We observed the processes of domination and control, the accompanying sense of helplessness and the concomitant subtle victimization of the women and staff.

The consequences of this type of model were most assuredly unintended but they were far removed from what Discovery House was attempting to accomplish. Based upon the overall experiences of the board, the staff, the volunteers and the women, it is safe to suggest that the pure protectionist model had little utility if the concern was to empower the women and their children in their struggle to end family violence.

7.1.5 Findings Relevant to the Research Process

A number of findings relative to research with battered women in shelters warrant mention. These findings are summarized as follows:

a) Research with battered women must be approached with considerable caution to avoid placing the women in further danger and to avoid exacerbating their vulnerability to further duress in an already chaotic life;

b) Battered women are an excellent and reliable source of data;

c) Because of the small numbers of shelters and shelter staff in each facility, considerable data cannot be reported if confidentiality is to be maintained;

d) Observation in the shelter is a very useful technique;

e) If follow-up studies of battered women are conducted the researchers require some ability to identify serious problems and to secure appropriate help.

7.2 Recommendations

The findings of this study and our experiences in its implementation have led to a number of recommendations which have relevance for Discovery House in particular and for those interested in second stage housing generally.

7.2.1 Recommendations for Discovery House

Recommendations pertaining to the management of Discovery House are as follows:

a) It is recommended that the board become more representative of the Calgary Family Support Society and that members be elected from the general membership;

b) It is important that the board become more independent through developing their knowledge about wife-battering and the day-to-day operation of the shelter;

c) The board, in conjunction with the staff, should develop a philosophy of service delivery with specific objectives which will avoid the sexist attitudes of mainstream society;

d) It is recommended that the board activate the current committee structure and consider having equal representation from the staff and women on these committees;

e) The board should seriously consider creating a management committee to oversee the running of the House and to evaluate the performance of the executive director;

f) The board is urged to rectify the management problems as soon as possible.

Recommendations for programs are as follows:

a) It is recommended that the length of stay at Discovery House be adjusted according to the individual needs of the women;

b) The rules and regulations should be reformulated to facilitate communal living;

c) The mandatory component of the program should be eliminated;

d) Programming should be done individually with each woman and a counsellor at time of admission;

e) There should be a transition program for those women moving from emergency shelters to the House.

f) There should be less emphasis on therapy except where needed and more emphasis on the provision of emotional support and concrete information;

g) Individual counselling should be made more available at night and on weekends and should be more flexible in scheduling and location of the counselling;

h) The women should be followed-up for at least three months;

i) Child care hours should be changed to accommodate those women working or going to school and only skilled staff should be permitted to work in child care;

j) Volunteers should be more closely screened, trained and should be included on an equal basis with staff.

Recommendations for links with the community are as follows:

a) Discovery House should attempt to use more community resources in their programs to facilitate the women's move back to the community;

b) Relationships with the emergency shelters should be improved in terms of communication, coordination of the movement of the women, and clarification of admission criteria and programs;

c) Discovery House should disseminate clearer information about their programs across the province;

d) The natural network of ex-residents of all the shelters should be supported by both Discovery House and the emergency shelters.

7.2.2 Recommendations for Second Stage Housing

The following recommendations are made about second stage housing in general:

a) Second stage housing is definitely required for battered women and their children for the purposes of safety and supportive counselling for both themselves and their children;

b) More second stage housing is required in rural areas to prevent uprooting women and their children from their communities;

c) Alternative models of housing need to be considered which are sensitive to the realities of the women's lives, namely instability and lack of continuity. The current two-step emergency/second-stage approach tends to create instability and does not promote continuity. A multi-purpose shelter is a possibility as is a single administration of both second stage and first-stage housing. The shelters should be closely linked geographically and through shared programs and staff;

d) If the above is not possible, second stage and emergency shelters must work very closely together for the benefit of the women and their children;

e) Self-contained apartments which are secure are preferred over communal living;

f) Common play areas for children both inside and outside of the shelter which are large and safe are strongly recommended;

g) Time limits on stays at second stage houses should be flexible. Women need a lot of time and this varies from individual to individual;

h) Minimum programs required appear to be individual counselling which is supportive and informative. There should be some professional expertise on staff but the use of outside agencies should be encouraged and supported over in-house programs;

i) Day care is a very helpful service and, where possible, should be offered;

j) Second stage housing should be open to continued contact from ex-residents;

k) Community services should be closely linked to the shelter to facilitate the women's move back into the community;

l) The natural networks of ex-residents of shelters should be encouraged and supported;

m) The legal system and the police need to offer more protection to battered women to prevent repeated uses of the shelter;

n) The social welfare system is urged to develop specific policies about battered women and their children to insure more humane treatment and realistic support for women using second stage housing and after their return to the community. Financial support for day care services is very important;

o) Shelters must address the matter of philosophy of service delivery, and what this means in terms of objectives, admission criteria, organization of programs, and management. The primary thrust should be to avoid replicating the conditions of battering.

REFERENCES

Armstrong, Pat and Hugh Armstrong
1978 *The Double Ghetto*. Toronto: McClelland and Stewart Ltd.

Ball, Margaret
1977 Issues of Violence in Family Casework. *Social Casework*, 58.

Ball, Patricia and Elizabeth Wyman
1978 Battered Wives and Powerlessness: What Can Counsellors Do? *Victimology*, 2: 3-4:545-552.

Barnsley, Jan, et al.
1980 *Battered & Blamed: A Report on Wife Assault from the Perspective of Battered Women*. Vancouver: Women's Research Centre.

Beaudry, Micheline
1985 *Battered Women*. Montreal: Black Rose Books Ltd.

Bostwick, Gerald J. Jr. and Nancy S. Kyte
1985 Validity and Reliability. In. R.M. Grinnell, Jr. *Social Work Research and Evaluation* (2nd ed.). Ill: F.E. Peacock Publications.

Bowker, Lee F., et al.
1981 *Beating Wife Beating*. Milwaukee: University of Wisconsin, School of Social Welfare.

Brown, M.M., B.E. Aguirre and Carol Jorgensen
1981 Abusers of Clients of a Women's Shelter: Their Socialization & Resources. *Journal of Sociology & Social Welfare*, 8:3:462-470.

Browne, Stephen G.
1980 In Sickness & in Health: Analysis of a Battered Women Population. Denver, Colorado: Denver Anti-Crime Council.

Cazenave, Noel A. and Murray Straus
1978 *Race, Class Network Embeddedness and Marital Violence: A Search for Potent Support Systems*. Durham: University of New Hampshire.

Chan, Kwok B.
1978 *Husband Wife Violence in Toronto*. Doctoral dissertation. York University.

Chapman, J.
1978 The Economics of Women's Victimization. In J. Chapman & M. Gates (eds.) *The Victimization of Women*. Beverly Hills, California: Sage Publications.

Craft, Judy and Mona Wynn
1985 *Second Stage Housing: Assessing the Need in Saint John. Funded by Canada Employment and Immigration Commission* and the New Brunswick Department of Social Services.

Coleman, Karen, Maxine Weinman and Bartholomew Hsi
1980 Factors Affecting Conjugal Violence. *Journal of Psychology*, 105:2:197-202.

Cronbach, Lee J.
1970 *Essentials of Psychological Testing* (3rd ed.). New York: Harper & Row.

Davis, Liane and Bonnie Carlson
1981 Attitudes of Service Providers Towards Domestic Violence. *Social Work Research and Abstracts*, 17:4:34-39.

Dibble, Ursula and Murray Straus
1980 Some Social Structure Determinants of Inconsistency Between Attitudes and Behavior. *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, 42:1.

Dobash, Rebecca E. and Russell Dobash
1977 Love, Honour and Obey: Institutional Ideologies and the Struggle for Battered Women. *Contemporary Crises*, 1:407-415.

1978 Wives: The "Appropriate" Victims of Marital Violence. *Victimology*, 2.

1981 Community Response to Violence Against Wives: Charivari, Abstract Justice and Patriarchy. *Social Problems*, 28:5.

Dobash, Rebecca E., Russell Dobash, C. Cavanaugh and M. Wilson
1978 Wife Beating: The Victims Speak. A Conversation with Battered Women. *Victimology*, 2:3-4:608-622.

Downey, Joanne and Jane Howell
1976 *Wife Battering: A Review & Preliminary Enquiry into Local Incidence, Needs & Resources*. Vancouver: United Way of Greater Vancouver, Social Policy and Research.

Dutton, Don and S.L. Painter
1982 Traumatic Bonding: The Development of Emotional Attachments in Battered Women and Other Victims of Intermittent Abuse. *Victimology*, 7.

Eekelaar, John M. and Sanford N. Katz
1979 *Family Violence: An International and Interdisciplinary Study*. Toronto: Butterworths.

Ferraro, Kathleen J.
1981 *Battered Women and the Shelter Movement*. Doctoral dissertation, Arizona State University.

Filstead, William, J. (ed.)
1970 Qualitative Methodology. Chicago: Markham.

Flynn, J.
1977 Recent Findings Related to Wife Abuse. Social Casework, 58.

Gayford, J.J.
1978 Battered Wives. In J.P. Martin (ed.) Violence in the Family. Toronto: J.P. Wiley.

Gelles, Richard
1972 The Violent Home. Beverly Hills, California: Sage Publications.

1976 Abused Wives: Why Do They Stay? Journal of Marriage & the Family, 38:4.

1980 Violence in the Family: A Review of Research in the 70s. Journal of Marriage and the Family, 42:4.

Gelles, Richard J. and Claire P. Cornell
1985 Intimate Violence in Families. Beverly Hills: Sage Publications Inc.

Gold, Raymond L.
1969 Roles in Sociological Field Observations. In G.J. McCall and J.L. Simmons (eds.) Issues in Participant Observation. Reading Mass: Addison-Wesley.

Grenier, Diana and Danielle Frechette
1980 Research on Wife Abuse. Report consisting of 6 sections. Ottawa: Canada, Secretary of State.

Handelman, Mark and Wendy Ward
1976 Battered Women: Emergency Shelter and the Law. University of Windsor, Faculty of Law, Community Law Program, Canada, Secretary of State.

Hudson, Walter and Sally McIntosh
1981 The Assessment of Spouse Abuse: Two Quantifiable Dimensions. Journal of Marriage and the Family, 43:4:873-888.

Jobling, Megan
1974 Battered Wives: A Survey. Social Service Quarterly, 47.

Langley, Roger and Richard Levy
1977 Wife Beating: The Silent Crisis. New York: Dutton.

Loeske, D.R. and S.F. Berk
1981 Defining "Help": Initial Encounters Between Battered Women and Shelter Staff. Presented at the National Conference of Family Violence Researchers, University of New Hampshire, Durham.

Lofland, John and Lynn H. Lofland
1984 Analyzing Social Settings (2nd ed.). Belmont, Ca: Wadsworth Publishing Co.

Lynch, Margaret
1978 The Follow-up of Abused Children: A Researcher's Nightmare. In John Eekelaar and S. Katz (eds.) Family Violence: An International and Interdisciplinary Study. Toronto: Butterworths.

Kim, Jae-on and Charles W. Mueller
1978a Factor Analysis: What it is and How to do it. London: Sage Publications.

1978b Factor Analysis. London: Sage Publications.

Klein, Dorie
1979 Can This Marriage be Saved? Battery and Sheltering. Crime and Social Justice, 10:12.

MacLeod, F. (ed)
1979 Family Violence: Report of the Task Force on Family Violence. United Way of the Lower Mainland, Vancouver, B.C.

MacLeod, Linda
1980 Wife Battering in Canada: The Vicious Circle. Ottawa: Canadian Advisory Council on the Status of Women.

Marsden, Dennis
1978 Sociological Perspectives on Family Violence. In J.P. Martin, ed., Violence in the Family. Toronto: J.P. Wiley.

Martin, Del
1976 Battered Wives. San Francisco: Glide Publications.

McGregor, Douglas
1960 The Human Scale of Enterprise. New York: McGraw-Hill Book Co.

Meade-Ramrattan, Joanne, Mary L. Cerre and Mary Lynn Porto
1980 Physically Abused Women: Satisfaction with Sources of Help. The Social Worker, 48:4.

Menzies, K.
1977 The Women's Emergency Centre: An Assessment. Department of Sociology and Anthropology, University of Guelph.

Menzies, Kenneth S.
1978 Road to Independence: Role of a Refuge. Victimology, 3:1-2:141-148.

Miller, Nick
1975 Battered Spouses. Birkenhead, Willmer Bros. Ltd.

Pagelow, Mildred, D.
1981 Woman-Battering Victims and their Experiences. Beverly Hills: Sage Publications.

Parker, Barbara and Dale N. Schumacher
1978 Battered Wife Syndrome and Violence in the Nuclear Family of Origin: A Controlled Pilot Study. American Journal of Public Health, 67:8.

Patti, Rino, J.
1985 Organizational Resistance and Change: The View from Below. In Simon Slavin (ed.) Social Administration: The Management of the Social Services (2nd ed.). New York: The Haworth Press Inc.

Pedhazur, E.J.
1973 Multiple Regression in Behavioural Research: Explanation and Prediction. Toronto: Holt, Rinehart & Winston.

Peterson, Roger
1980 Social Class, Social Learning and Wife Abuse. Social Service Review, 54:3.

Pizzey, Erin
1974 Scream Quietly or the Neighbors Will Hear. London: Penguin.

Riddington, J.B.
1977 Women in Transition: A Study of Vancouver Transition House as an Agent of Change. Master's thesis. University of British Columbia.

Roberts, Allen
1981 Sheltering Battered Women: A National Study and Service Guide. New York: Springer Publishing Company.

Robinson, John P. and Philip R. Shaver
1973 Measures of Social Psychological Attitudes. Ann Arbor Institute for Social Research, University of Michigan.

Rosewater, L.B.
1984 Feminist Therapy. In L.E. Walker (ed.) Women and Mental Health Policy. Beverly Hills, CA: Sage Publications.

Rotter, J.B.
1966 Generalized Expectancies for Internal Versus External Control of Reinforcement. Psychological Monographs, 80:609.

Rounsaville, Bruce J.
1978 Theories in Marital Violence: Evidence from a Study of Battered Women. Victimology, 3:11-31.

Roy, Maria (ed.)
1977 Battered Women: A Psychosociological Study of Domestic Violence. Toronto: Van Nostrand Reinhold & Co.

Sample Survey and Data Bank, University of Regina
1984 Silence: Descriptive Report of a Follow-up Study of Abused Women Using a Shelter.

Saskatchewan Department of Social Services
1981 Women's Shelters in Saskatchewan. Report prepared by the Planning and Education Branch. Regina, Saskatchewan.

Schechter, Susan
1982 Women and Male Violence. Boston: South End Press.

Schwartz, Howard and Jerry Jacobs
1979 Qualitative Sociology. New York: The Free Press.

Small, Shirley and Mary Parthun
1980 Domestic Violence Against Women. Policy paper of Ontario Association of Professional Social Workers, Metropolitan Toronto Region, Social Action Committee.

Sonkin, Daniel J. and Del Martin, et al.
1985 Batterer: A Treatment Approach. New York: Springer Publishing Co. Inc.

Spradley, James P.
1980 Participant Observation. New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston.

Star, Barbara
1978 Comparing Battered and Non-Battered Women. Victimology, 3:32-44.

Statistics Canada
1983 1981 Census, Canada, Population, Religion. Catalogue 92-912 (Vol. 1 - National Series). Ottawa: Minister of Supply and Services.

Statistics Canada
1984 1981 Census, Canada, Ethnic Origin. Catalogue 92-911 (Vol. 1 - National Series). Ottawa: Minister of Supply and Services.

Stein, Herman D.
1985 Board, Execution and Staff. In Simon Slavin (ed.) Social Administration: The Management of the Social Services (2nd ed.). New York: The Haworth Press Inc.

Straus, Murray
1964 Measuring Families. In Harold T. Christensen (ed.) Handbook of Marriage and the Family. Chicago: Rand McNally.

1976 Sexual Inequality, Cultural Norms and Wife Beating. Victimology, 1:1:54-70.

1977 A Sociological Perspective on the Prevention and Treatment of Wife Beating. In Maria Roy (ed.) *Battered Women: A Psycho-sociological Study of Domestic Violence*. Toronto: Van Nostrand, Reinhold & Co.

1979 Violence: The Conflict Tactic Scales. *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, 41:1.

Straus, Murray, Richard Celles, and Suzanne Steinmetz
1980 *Behind Closed Doors: Violence in the American Family*. New York: Anchor Books.

Straus, Murray and Gerald T. Hotaling
1980 *Social Causes of Husband-Wife Violence*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

United States Department of Health and Human Services
1980 *A Monograph on Services to Battered Women*. Publication No. (OHOS) 79-0578.

Walker, Lenore E.
1978 Battered Women and Learned Helplessness. *Victimology*, 2:3-4:525-534.

1979 *The Battered Woman*. New York: Harper & Row.

1981 Battered Women: Sex Roles and Clinical Issues. *Professional Psychiatry*, 21:1.

1984 *The Battered Woman Syndrome*. New York: Springer Publishing Co.

Walls, Deborah L. and Christine Coutois
1981 Trends in the Treatment of Men who Commit Violence Against Women. *Personnel and Cuidance Journal*, 60:4:245-249.

Weiner, Myrone, E.
1982 *Human Services Management*. Ill: The Dorsey Press.

Women's Research Centre
1980 *A Review of Munroe House: Second Stage Housing for Battered Women*. Vancouver.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Appendix I: Description of Discovery House and Supporting Documents

Appendix II: Measurement Instruments

Appendix III: Factor Analysis and Tests of Reliability

APPENDIX I

Description of House 1982

Rent Schedule

Discovery House Rules

House Rules for Children

Rules for Children's Outings

Childcare Information Package

New Start Volunteers

In-House Volunteers

Discovery House is unique as we are the only long-term, second-stage shelter for battered spouses and their children in Alberta and only the second one in Canada. It is a small apartment building with seven familial units, fully furnished inclusive of dishes and bedding. The mandate is to provide long-term accommodation in a secure and supportive environment, while offering in-house workshops -- working towards being more independent individuals.

Residents stay for a minimum of one month and a maximum of three months, which gives them time away from the crisis situation, time to think, explore future options and familiarize themselves with outside resources.

We offer 24 hour security, plus emotional support. In-house counseling is offered although we do try to plug clients into outside resources for some continuity when they leave our residence. We act as a liaison between client and other service agencies.

We encourage the girls to share their experiences with the other residents so they realize they are not alone and this often helps them to settle in more quickly. While they stay with us we offer in-house programs: these are parenting, budgeting, assertiveness, sexuality, coping with stress and support groups, and employment skills for job opportunities, which are all run by professionals. These types of groups help to build up self-esteem and make the clients more independent and self-sufficient. It is our goal not only to make these women more independent, but to also break the battering cycle and the welfare cycle.

Since our inception September 1, 1980, we have accommodated 66 women and 124 children. We are always full to capacity and our turn away rate increases every month. In January and February of 1982 we turned away 15 per month.

Of the 66 women we have accommodated 7 are still in residence. Of the 59 women who have left Discovery House, 17 (30.36%) returned home, 5 (8.93%) returned home but left again and went on their own, 3 (5.36%) returned home then returned to Discovery House, 29 (51.79%) left Discovery House and went on their own, 2 (3.57%) unknown.

While residents stay with us we match them with a one to one volunteer, who provides support and is a friend to them during their stay at Discovery House and follows them out into the community for six months reporting back to staff during that time. Discovery House has a core group of 30 active volunteers. This helps us in knowing what happens to the residents after they leave, and also helps the residents while they reintegrate back into a single society.

The total acceptance from the community and our increasing turn away rate shows the need as well as recognition of the need for a facility such as ours.

As most of the children that have been through the trauma of a battering situation require extra attention and help to deal with their fears and to prevent modeling of a future batterer, it is our intention to bring on stream professional supervised child care.

It is our intention to expand to offer a more extensive service to more families. Discovery House has made offers to purchase the existing building, and has purchased the empty lot next door. We have architects who have done the preliminary drawings, have obtained our Development Permit, but have now had to stop all plans for further development.

The Provincial Government has set down funding guidelines as 21 days and under for Women's Shelters in Alberta. We do not fit under those guidelines so we are not eligible for future funding. Discovery House appealed this decision and was turned down again. Without securing operating funds we are unable to secure capital funds. There are commitments for capital funds, from private sectors, contingent on securing operating funds. Due to this government technicality, future work has been stopped and Discovery House only has enough funds to continue operating until the end of August, 1982. Through the intervention of Judy Erola, Minister for the Status of Women, who visited our home on June 6, 1982, and subsequently intervened on our behalf through the Honourable Monique Begin to Premier Lougheed, we have received funding for the next fiscal year 1982-1983 for the amount of $92,701.00. With operating costs in place we have been given a verbal commitment for $500,000.00 from the Burns Foundation towards the development of our new facility with pledges under consideration by other private groups.

Since our facility opened the need for our existence has been proven. Discovery House has sponsored two educational conferences for both professional and lay people, on battering. We have been instrumental in developing a battered women's support group in Calgary and also run a 24-hour crisis line for battered women.

REASONS WHY THERE IS A NEED FOR SECOND-STAGE SHELTERS:

WHAT HAPPENS TO PEOPLE WHO DO NOT HAVE THE USE OF OUR FACILITY?

Out of the 66 women we have served since our opening, over 40 had been repeaters to the Women's Emergency Shelter. Not only had they been to the shelter once, but as many as 10 to 12 times. The other women we have accommodated had left the home before, but due to lack of accommodation had been forced to return to the violent situation. When we get a referral from the Women's Shelter, we are most often full and the women must return to the home. 20% of our referrals also come from Social Services (point of interest)

WHY DO WOMEN PREFER DISCOVERY HOUSE RATHER THAN GOING OUT ON THEIR OWN IMMEDIATELY?

We provide a safe environment and security. The horrendous fear of being found by their spouse and being beaten even more severely for having left is one reason women come to Discovery House. These people have no money and very low self-esteem. As long as they stay in a short-term facility, Social Services will not help them financially. The services at short-term shelters are free. The women don't know what alternatives there are for them and the fear of going out into the unknown is a reality. They remain in a violent situation often because it is "better the devil you know than the devil you don't." FEAR AND SECURITY are a major factor in the decision to apply for residence in Discovery House.

Short-term facilities certainly alleviate the immediate crisis but it is a proven fact by the recidivism rate that twenty one days is not enough time away from the crisis to make any positive or coherent decisions: they are barely past the bandage stage, and have not had enough time for the bruises to heal.

These women are in an anxiety ridden state and are unable to think clearly enough to consider looking for a place on their own, without considering the fear of being alone and found. They are certainly unable to research any self-help groups or counseling services available. Also a lot of the services and groups advertised are not as valuable as advertised, especially for the types of needs these women are in search of. Most or all of these self-help groups are not orientated to meet the needs of a battered person. They have very special needs as they all go through a grief type of process. Discovery House tries to find and provide programs that meet the individual's needs.

The women certainly are unable to find immediate accommodation, sort out finances, seek legal advice, plus plug into any other types of assistance they may need. Most of them are not even able to determine what their immediate needs are. Housing is a major concern for anyone with the added trauma of just having a violent situation, from which you may still be physically marked. These women have points against them before they start: (1) They are single with children; (2) They are on welfare. Most landlords look upon them as undesirables. Welfare, often does not meet the rents that most places are asking.

The programming offered at Discovery House is geared to making our clients more independent, self-sufficient individuals. Also to try and break the abuse cycle and also the Welfare cycle.

Short-term shelters are communal living and lack privacy, quiet, and a place to think or even a place to cry alone.

One problem about housing, a person must be resident in Calgary for at least six months before being eligible to even register for subsidized housing on the Calgary Housing List.

These women have left ten to twelve times in the past and returned to their husbands because the community is not meeting their needs.

The Social Services systems are so busy that even after the women move into Discovery House they have to wait for 10 days to two weeks for an appointment with a Social Worker. How could they possibly do this renting from a private landlord? All the problems they are up against trying to get through the different agencies often makes them return. There is no way they are able to fight through these systems alone, without a secure environment and support and direction during this traumatic time.

WHY SO MANY RETURN TO THE BATTERING SITUATION?

Due to the lack of facilities and housing in Alberta, women are forced in many instances to return to the violent situation. The only other option open to them in many cases is the mother going to the Y.W.C.A. or a single women's hostel and the children being put into foster homes. We offer the only long-term facility to house both mother and children. Certainly this is a major concern in keeping children with a family member. Also, the Women's Shelter does not accept young males over the age of 13 years.

DO WE HAVE A WAITING LIST?

We do not have a waiting list as such, because when someone phones for a place we are usually full and by the time we have a vacancy the women have usually returned home as they are limited to 21 days at the short-term facility. We run on the basis that whoever phones when we have a vacancy we accommodate them. Of course if a woman calls when we know that we shall have a place for her within a week or two usually she can wait it out at the shelter. For these reasons we do not have a waiting list as such, but we do record each referral that we get.

ORGANIZATIONAL STRUCTURE

Discovery House is a private agency founded by a group of concerned women who began meeting in 1979 and who opened Discovery House August 1, 1980. The agency is run by the executive director, Mary Ann Sanderson, RN, BSW, one social worker, BSW, and a volunteer coordinator, BA.

The board is comprised of 12 members who represent the community at large and specific social agencies. The board sets general policies and operates through a committee structure.

one person-----------------------$290.00 a month

two persons----------------------$430.00 a month

three persons--------------------$490.00 a month

four persons---------------------$505.00 a month

five persons---------------------$525.00 a month

six persons----------------------$545.00 a month

seven persons--------------------$565.00 a month

eight persons--------------------$585.00 a month

nine persons---------------------$605.00 a month

ten persons----------------------$625.00 a month

and up

DISCOVERY HOUSE RULES

THIS AGREEMENT IS MADE BETWEEN THE CALGARY FAMILY SUPPORT SOCIETY, DISCOVERY HOUSE AND ______________________________

1. THERE ARE THREE BASIC RULES:

NO MEN - Because of the nature of our organization, we ask that no men be brought on the premises for the comfort of the other residents. (This excludes workmen, volunteers, etc.) If you wish to see your mate we ask that you do so away from the house. If your mate does come to the house he will be given the phone number and asked to call to make an appointment at a time that is agreeable to both the resident and the staff. This rule is strictly adhered to and any infraction will result in a resident being asked to leave Discovery House.

NO ALCOHOL OR NON-MEDICATION DRUGS - No alcohol is to be used in Discovery House and no resident is to return to Discovery House under the influence of alcohol or drugs.

OUR STREET ADDRESS IS A SECRET - There is no mail delivery to the street address and all mail can be directed to:

P.O. BOX 967
POSTAL STATION "M"
CALGARY, ALTA.
T2P 2K4

Please do not give the address of the house to anyone who is not coming to visit you. The reason for this rule is fairly simple. We work hard to ensure that the address is not public knowledge for the protection of all the residents. Also for protection sake we ask that only staff members answer the doors and phones. At no time must children answer the doors. All children are to use the Mud room door at all times. When muddy or wet children should remove their shoes at the door.

2. STAFF

The house is staffed on a 24 hour basis. In addition to the day staff there is staff to cover the evenings and weekends. The staff is available to help you with your problems and put you in touch with other services and resources you may need.

If an emergency occurs there is a staff member in the office area who is on call.

If no member of staff is in the house in the case of an emergency please phone 911, which is the emergency number for Police, Fire and Ambulance.

Because the staff is often doing many things during the day it is important for you to let us know what your needs are.

3. CLEANING

Each family is responsible for the upkeep of their apartment. If you have children it is your responsibility to see that proper hygenic standards are maintained and that you keep your suite clean. To insure that health standards are maintained, suites (if necessary) will be inspected once a week by a staff member.

Vacu-flow outlets are in each suite. The hose and attachments will be kept in the storage room.

There is a coin operated washer and dryer on the lower level and also on the third floor.

Each suite is fully furnished and contains linens, bedding and kitchen equipment. Please note that all contents of each apartment are property of Discovery House, and that they must remain here when you leave. Upon termination of your stay at Discovery House, inventory will be taken. The damage deposit will not be returned until the suite is in suitable condition for rental to another tenant. Items that are lost or damaged will be replaced at the occupant's expense. When leaving the suite launder the bedding, disinfect bathroom and kitchen, vacuum and wash all stains off walls and beds.

4. CHILDREN

a. YOUR CHILDREN ARE YOUR RESPONSIBILITY. Never leave them alone in your apartment. The other women in the house will probably share child care with you if you must go out without your children, and will ask you to offer the same privilege to them when they need child care. Volunteers are sometimes available to come in and look after your children while you are out but please be sure to discuss this with the Volunteer Co-ordinator well in advance as it takes time to make these arrangements. Please note that staff are not available to look after your children. If your children are left unattended they become the responsibility of the staff who will call in the appropriate child care services if the well being of the child is in jeopardy.

b. We feel that both residents and staff need time to relax and talk among themselves without the children. For this reason we have set up the following bedtimes.

- 8 years and under 8:00 p.m.
- 9 - 13 years 9:00 p.m.
- 14 years and over - later if they respect the quiet that allows the younger children to sleep.
- NO children in common room or halls

c. When activities are arranged for the residents, babysitters will be supplied. When you are out during the evening it is your responsibility to make certain your children are properly fed and bedtime arrangements are made.

d. Mothers must get up in the morning with their children and get them dressed, and give them breakfast.

The Calgary Family Support Society acknowledges that the mother has the ultimate responsibility, care and control of her child/children and the mother acknowledges that the Calgary Family Support Society is governed by the Child Protection Act in that the facility is obliged to call on the services of the Child Protection Agency where deemed necessary to protect the child or children.

Although you have the ultimate responsibility for your child, children left unattended will become the responsibility of the staff.

5. LEAVING THE HOUSE

Let the staff know when you are going out and when you will be back. Curfew is 1:00 a.m. If you expect to be later than 1:00 a.m. please call the office to notify a staff person. If you plan to be away from Discovery House overnight please notify staff in advance. Failure to comply with these regulations will be considered a breach of agreement and will result in one week's notice to terminate residency.

6. In house programs, support groups and individual planning/problem solving sessions are a regular part of the program at Discovery House. Attendance is mandatory. Failure to meet this expectation will be viewed as a breach of agreement and will result in one week's notice to vacate.

7. Our business phone number is 277-0718 but there are pay phones for your use.

8. Large amounts of money should be given to the staff for safe keeping.

9. Residents are to be out of the common room by 11:00 p.m. weekdays but the night staff is available if needed. On weekends commonroom curfew is at the discretion of the weekend staff.

10. Residents must respect the privacy of other residents and should not enter other's suites unless invited to do so. Please keep your apartment doors locked when you are not home to ensure the safety of your personal belongings.

11. Door Locks - All doors can be safely locked. Please be sure that your patio and apartment doors are kept locked, especially if you are out of your apartment.

12. Lost or Stolen Articles - The management is not responsible for articles lost or stolen on the premises.

13. Problems - Please tell us if you find something wrong or missing at the house. We ask you to work with us so that we are all calm and comfortable.

14. No Pets

We hope that your stay here will be helpful to you. We ask that you treat the house with respect.

I HAVE READ THIS AGREEMENT AND UNDERSTAND THE CONTENTS. I AGREE TO FULFILL MY PART OF THIS AGREEMENT.

I UNDERSTAND THAT MY COMMITTMENT IS FOR A PERIOD OF NOT LESS THAN ONE MONTH.

I FURTHER UNDERSTAND THAT IF I LEAVE DISCOVERY HOUSE PRIOR TO THE END OF THE FIRST MONTH, I WILL NOT RECEIVE ANY REIMBURSEMENT OF MONIES PAID FOR ACCOMODATION. AFTER THE FIRST MONTH I AGREE TO GIVE DISCOVERY HOUSE A MINIMUM OF ONE WEEK"S NOTICE IN WRITING OF INTENT TO TERMINATE RESIDENCY.

Witnessed by ____________________ Signature of Resident ____________________

Date ____________________

HOUSE RULES FOR CHILDREN

1. MOTHERS MUST BE RESPONSIBLE TO BE UP IN THE MORNING WHEN THEIR CHILDREN GET UP.

2. SCHOOL AGE CHILDREN MUST ATTEND SCHOOL EACH DAY.

3. BEDTIMES ARE AS STANDS.
    - 8 YEARS AND UNDER - 8:00 P.M.
    - 9-13 YEARS 9:00 P.M.
    - 14 YEARS AND OVER 10:00 P.M.

4. THE LOCATION OF THE HOUSE IS SECRET. DO NOT TELL ANY OF YOUR FRIENDS OR FAMILY WHERE IT IS. THIS IS VERY IMPORTANT.

5. STAFF ARE THE ONLY PEOPLE WHO CAN ANSWER THE DOORS, PHONES OR BUZZERS.

6. CHILDREN MUST KEEP OUT OF THE OFFICES AND NOT BOTHER THINGS ON ON THE DESKS WITHOUT PERMISSION.

7. WHEN CHILDREN LEAVE THE HOUSE THEY MUST PUSH THE BUZZER TO BE LET BACK IN. THEY MUST NOT KEEP RUNNING BACK AND FORTH. AFTER TWO TIMES THEY WILL BE ASKED TO STAY INSIDE AND PLAY IN THEIR OWN APARTMENTS.

8. CHILDREN MUST NOT PLAY IN THE HALLWAYS OR OTHER RESIDENTS SUITES.

9. CHILDREN PLAY IN THE PLAYROOM ONLY DURING OPERATING HOURS.

10. CHILDREN MUST NOT BE DOWNSTAIRS UNLESS ACCOMPANIED BY MOTHER.

CHILDREN CAN BRING THEIR PROBLEMS TO THE STAFF AND WE WILL DO OUR BEST TO HELP THEM.

RULES FOR CHILDREN'S OUTINGS WEEKDAY AND SATURDAYS

The rules are as follow:

(1) The volunteers are responsible for your safety therefore all children must follow their instructions.

(2) No fighting of any kind will be tolerated

(3) Children must stay with the group and not wonder off by themselves.

(4) All children will leave and return to Discovery House by the house Van.

(5) While riding in the Van all children must wear seat belts. No food or drinks or gum are allowed in the Van. The Van must return in a clean fashion.

(6) If money is required you will be told ahead of time. Please do not ask the volunteer to provide money for you or to buy you drinks etc.

(7) There will be no rough housing while travelling in the Van.

By following these rules we hope your outings will be both fun and rewarding. Out of town trips will be planned and the success of these outings will depend on your participation and co-operation. Our volunteers are real fun people and have put alot of thought into the activities for the future Sat.

Please check the down stairs calendar for future events to come.

Thank You.

CHILDCARE INFORMATION PACKAGE

Childcare Co-Ordinator:______________________________

Childcare Workers:______________________________

____

Childcare Hours of Operation:

9:00 am - 12:00 Noon
1:00 pm - 4:00 pm

Closed Wednesday Afternoon

Notification will be given to all residents should the childcare need to be closed due to staff illness or other unforseen events.

PURPOSE:

Throughout our childcare program we provide opportunity for children of all ages to BUILD his/her self confidence and develop their independence, thus strengthening the relationship between mother and child in ways that are appropriate to their new situation. Although we are able to provide direct intervention, it is the general belief of the center that children learn through imitation of adults and their peers and by being positively reinforced for appropriate behaviors.

OBJECTIVES:

(1) To strengthen his/her awareness of him/herself; to develop security and a feeling of success.

(2) To develop a sense of responsibility.

(3) To learn to express inner feelings.

(4) To learn how to recognize their anger and re-direct it: to be able to deal with it in a positive way.

(5) To teach children to utilize their free time in a more constructive way.

(6) To deal with anger and aggression in a fashion other than through violence.

(7) To be able to socialize with peer group and to value one's own rights and the rights of others.

(8) To work and play independently.

(9) To widen language skills (listening and speaking)

(10) To be able to accept help and direction from adults.

(11) To encourage parent participation in program area and to keep open communication for the children between the mothers and the staff.

CHILDCARE DISCIPLINE POLICY

One of the goals of the Childcare program is to provide the children with consistent support, encouragement and guidance. We hope that they will develop a sense of independence and responsibility for themselves. In order to reach these goals we have definded the following rules:

RULES:

(1) Children will respect others personal space (No hitting, biting, kicking, pulling hair).

(2) While inside the building children will walk not run.

(3) Children will use inside voices (No yelling).

(4) Children will play with one toy at a time and replace the toy when finished before choosing another.

(5) Children will clean up after themselves

(6) Children must stay with the group on outings and not wander off by themselves.

(7) Children will be encouraged to express their feelings in an appropriate manner.

  (a) you may be angry but you are not to hurt anyone - or destroy things.

NO SPANKING POLICY:

Discovery House is a refuge from violence - physical, emotional or sexual. Whether a child has been abused themselves in all likelihood they suffer the scares from witnessing the violence in their family. Therefore we do not allow spanking for the following reasons:

  (a) spanking provides the child with a model for hitting others

  (b) spanking does not help the child understand what he/she has done wrong

  (c) choices are taken away from the child to correct their behaviour

  (d) child only learns that adults have control over them thus the adult takes on the responsibility for the childs behaviour

  (e) spanking releases the adults frustration because they do not have control over the child or the child's actions.

  (f) the adults need for control usually has nothing to do with the childs behaviour

TIME OUT

When a child is not able to follow the childcare rules, he/she will be placed in Time-Out. Time out procedure is as follows:

(1) Childs behaviour is not acceptable.

(2) Child is removed from the activity or situation.

(3) Child is asked to be quiet for approximately 1 - 5 minutes in an area away from the group.

(4) The time decided will be determined by the childs age.

(5) The child will be told his behaviour is unacceptable and the amount of time he/she will be in time-out.

(6) A clock will be placed where the child may see it to reassure the child.

(7) The child will be supervised by the staff during this time period.

(8) At the end of the designated time a staff will discuss with the child his/her inappropriate behaviour and ask the child how he/she could have behaved differently to get their need met.

(9) Child will be given a choice to rejoin the group when they feel ready,

(10) Disruptive children before going into time-out will be given a choice of removing themselves from the group until they feel ready to re-join the activity.

(11) Children under two years will not be placed in time-out but will be told "NO" when behaving inappropriately and be given another task to do or shown more appropriate behavior. This method will also be used for the children who need more encouragement and modeling.

Time-out procedures encourages the child to take responsibility for his/her own actions. Helps the child learn logical consequences for their actions. The method also helps the child understand that they have choices in life. Helps to break the violent cycle in showing alternate methods of discipline other than spanking, yelling etc.

CHILDCARE INFORMATION FORM:

Residents should make an appointment with the childcare co-ordinator to fill out the information form on their child in co-operation with the co-ordinator. The purpose of this form is to help Discovery House staff be aware of your childs needs and the direction that may need to be taken to meet the needs of your child and also the needs of the resident because the resident and their children form a family unit and what effects one member also effects others in the family setting.

RESIDENT PARENT RESPONSIBILITIES:

The childcare staff endeavors to fulfill their obligations to residents and their children but ask for your co-operation in the following requests:

(1) If your child is in diapers, please provide the amount your child will need as each stay.

(2) If your child is an infant or baby please bring their own blanket for nap time. Older children will be supplied a blanket by the staff.

(3) You are responsible to bring your child to and from childcare and to be on time when picking up your child.

(4) If you are planning an outside appointment please arrange with another resident to pick your child up and inform your child they will be doing so.

(5) Notify staff when you will not be picking up your child.

(6) Sign your child in and out of childcare

(7) No smoking in childcare area.

(8) Inform staff of any allergies your child may have and give any helpful information about your child to the staff.

(9) Do not bring down your childs personal toys

(10) You are encouraged to borrow childcare toys, games etc. by signing them out at any time during childcare hours.

(11) If your child is sick please discuss with the childcare co-ordinator to determine if your child should be in childcare at that time.

(12) We encourage residents to help, participate and observe their children and the other children while in the childcare area.

OBSERVATION OF CHILDREN

Childcare area is equipped with two way mirrors to facilitate parent observation of their child. We encourage residents to take advantage of this to watch your child interacting with others. The childcare co-ordinator is available to discuss any reactions or help you in any way to meet the needs of yourself and your child.

Residents are also encouraged to take active part with their child in the childcare area any time they wish.

YOUR CHILD IS IN CRISIS TOO:

Whether your child has been physically, emotionally, or sexually abused or not at all your child has witnessed or lived in an atmosphere where violence on some level occurred.

The staff of Discovery House is available to help the child and yourself deal with the many feelings that arise coming from a violent home situation.

It is common for children to go through all the stages the parent goes through, to feel afraid, angry, confussed, safe, resentful etc. they may miss the other parent left behind and have very confused messages going on in their head.

We endeavour to work with the residents to support and help their children work through their feelings and pay very special attention to help fulfil all their many needs.

MENU PLAN

Childcare provides a morning snack that is prepared fresh each day by the staff. Snacks include:

- peanut butter and crackers
- cheese and crackers
- fresh fruit
- fresh vegetables and dip
- muffins
- nuts and granola
- orange or apple juice

Children may help with the preparation of muffins, cookies or cakes for a special occasion. The staff is in charge of clean up after snacks and the dishes are washed and sterilized.

MONTHLY SCHEDULES

All residents will receive weekly, a schedule of activities planned for their children. The staff meets once a month for planning and residents are encouraged to give input to the co-ordinator before these meetings take place.

REASONS FOR IN-HOUSE

VOLUNTEERS

A PLAN OR ASSIST IN PROGRAMS FOR ADULTS.

B CO-ORDINATE OR ASSIST WITH CHILDREN'S PROGRAMS.

C ORGANIZE OR ASSIST WITH OUTDOOR ACTIVITIES.

THE STAFF ARE ALWAYS AVAILABLE TO HELP IN THE PROFESSIONAL AREAS BUT VOLUNTEERS ARE OUR MOST VALUABLE ASSET. WE REQUIRE AT LEAST FOUR ACTIVE VOLUNTEERS FOR EACH RESIDENT.

Suggestions for Adult Programs

- Job Finding Skills
- Health & Beauty Care
- Baking
- Sewing
- Excercise Classes
- Teach a Hand Craft
- Provide Transportation

We are open to new ideas and other suggestions that you may have!

SHARE YOUR TALENTS

Suggestions for Outdoor Activities

- Tour the surrounding area
- Bike Riding
- Skating (ice or roller)
- Swimming
- Hiking
- Trip to zoo or other park
- Plan a picnic, bar-b-que or Wiener Roast

Suggestions for Children's Activities

- Indoor Games
- Story Reading
- Painting
- Hand Crafts
- Drawing

Special emphasis and thoughtful planning is required for pre-bedtime activities.

OUR EXPECTATIONS OF YOU

SIX MONTH COMMITTMENT
of Three Hours a Week

DEPENDABILITY
PUNCTUALITY
ENTHUSIASM
CREATIVITY
RESPONSIBILITY
SENSITIVITY
FLEXIBILITY
INVENTIVENESS
STABILITY

This may be the first time that some of the children can really enjoy just being children.

Our residents and their children need interesting activities while they adjust to their new surroundings and acquaintances.

If you are a caring and conscientious person, we would appreciate any contributions you can make!

DISCOVERY HOUSE

BOX 967

STATION "M"

T2P 2K4

IN - HOUSE

VOLUNTEERS

Please Call

the

Co-ordinator of Volunteers

at

277 - 0718

VIOLENCE & ABUSE

AFFECTS ALL

MEMBERS OF

THE FAMILY

Your interest and efforts would greatly enhance our service delivery!

DISCOVERY HOUSE

Welcomes Your

TIME

TALENTS

&

IDEAS

Goal

To help resident to achieve more independance, to combat loneliness, to build self-esteem and to make a new friend.

ALL INFORMATION OBTAINED FROM THE RESIDENT IS STRICTLY CONFIDENTIAL.

This program is to start in the house and continue out into the community. All Volunteers must be very serious about making a six-month commitment. If the Volunteer should leave the program early it could lend to the residents feeling of rejection. The role of the volunteer is not the task of rehabilitating the resident but rather to be supportive of her as she progresses from one stage to another.

Types of Activities volunteer & resident

- Talk over a coffee
- Take her to the movies, theatre, a concert or sports event
- Get her involved in a night class
- Join her in a crafts course
- Take a drive to the mountains
- Take her to the zoo or park
- Go hiking, swimming, roller skating, riding, bowling etc.
- Teach her a new craft or sport
- Take her out to dinner or lunch
- Introduce her to new people
- Take her to singles outings

You should always be on time and never if possible cancel appointments. The volunteers should use their own judgement when suggesting an outing. Try to make the outing as interesting and enjoyable as possible.

Duties of Volunteers

- A volunteer must be active 12 hours a month
- Each volunteer will be requested to attend a brief but informative meeting once a month to inform her of changes or areas of interest to volunteers and residents.
- All volunteers are also requested to complete a monthly worksheet stating progress or problems
- Each volunteer should try to keep informed of helps that may contribute to her new friends well being.

DISCOVERY HOUSE

Discovery House is the only shelter in Alberta to offer long term refuge from a violent situation. Discovery House is available to those spouses who need additional time away from the violent situation to explore other possibilities, to objectively evalute the situation and to make relevant changes.

NEW START

If you have 3 hours free a week to be a friendly source of support to a resident of Discovery House, New Start will be of interest to you!!

REMEMBER..........

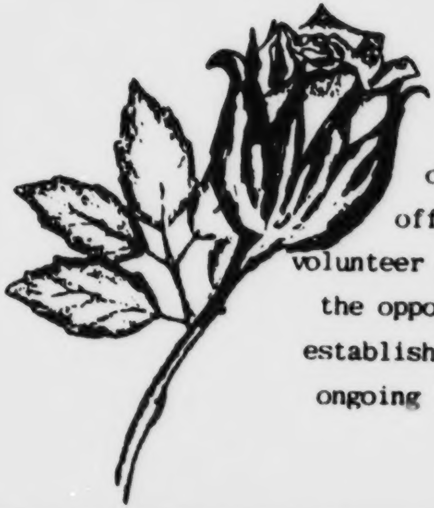
You cannot hand someone a rose without some of the fragrance staying with you.

PHONE: 290-0500 or 290-0501

DISCOVERY HOUSE

Introduces

NEW START



A one to one program offering both volunteer & resident the opportunity to establish a new and ongoing friendship.

APPENDIX II

Informed Consent Form

Face Sheet

Sociodemographic Profile

Admission Interview

Mid-Way Interview

Departure Interview

Follow-up Interview

Schedule I - Independence Index

Schedule II - Fear Scale

Schedule III - Rotter's Scale (1966)

Schedule IV - Conflict Tactics Scale

Staff Interview

Board Interview

Volunteer Interview

Outside Agencies Interview

List of Agencies Interviewed

INFORMED CONSENT FORM

As part of the Discovery House research project funded by the Federal Government of Canada, we are seeking information about the experiences of women who live at Discovery House and their experiences after they leave the House. A better understanding of Discovery House can hopefully lead to improved services for battered women in Canada and a better understanding of second stage housing.

As a resident of Discovery House, you are being asked to participate in three interviews that will explore your experiences while at Discovery House and one interview six months after you leave if your safety is in no way threatened. Those people interviewing you will be Tracy Smilie, Social Worker, Tracy Peressini, Sociologist, Lynn McDonald, Sociologist, all who are from the University of Calgary and who are not employed by Discovery House. Each questionnaire will take approximately 1½ hours to complete. During your stay you will also be asked to complete five short surveys that will take no longer than 15 minutes each. If you should decide to participation in our research project, you may refuse to answer any specific questions that you wish. Your are also free to withdraw your consent to participate at any time and this will in no way jeopardize your stay at Discovery House.

All the information you provide will be kept in the strictest confidence. Your name will not be identified with any of your responses and the results of your interviews will be kept in a locked file and the three persons mentioned above are the only persons who will have access to these files. All interview results will be destroyed six months after the completion of the study. A final research report that will in no way identify you will be made available to the Discovery House. If you would like to obtain a copy of the summary report, it will be available from Discovery House.

I hope you will be willing to help in this project but wish to assure you that your participation is entirely voluntary. Thank you for your assistance and cooperation.

______________________ Investigator ________________ Date

Telephone: 277-0718

I voluntarily agree to participate in this research project and have the opportunity to ask questions.

______________________ Respondent ________________ Date

Copies : Respondent (1)
File (1)

QUESTIONNAIRE/INTERVIEW FOR WOMEN

FACE SHEET
(to be completed prior to each interview)

1. Respondent's Name ________________________

2. Intake Number __________

3. Interviewer ______________________________

4. Interview Schedule/ Questionnaire (Circle one)
   - A. Admission
   - B. Mid-way
   - C. Discharge
   - D. Follow-up
   - E. Profile

5. Consent Form (Circle one)
   - A. Active
   - B. Expired
   - C. Renewed
   - D. Not Renewed - (Stop, Advise PI)

6. Interview Record

	Date	Time	Place	If interview taken Time Start	Time Ended
A.					
B.					
C.					
D.					

7. A. Handwritten Data Recording
   B. Mechanical Data Recording

8. Reason for No Interview (Circle one)
   - A. Respondent refused
     Why ____________________________
   - B. Respondent incapable
     Why ____________________________
   - C. Language barrier
     What language ______________
   - D. Suite vacant
   - E. No one at home (Suite)
   - F. Community
     - i) No such address
     - ii) No one Home - 3 calls
     - iii) No show (public place)
     - iv) No show (D.H.)

THE UNIVERSITY OF CALGARY:

A REVIEW OF A SECOND STAGE SHELTER FOR BATTERED WOMEN AND THEIR FAMILIES

[1/01-03] Identification Number:______________________________
[1/04-09] Date:____

INSTRUCTIONS: This questionnaire is organized into five sections. At the beginning of each section we explain the general purpose of the questions. Most of the questions can be answered by PLACING A CHECK-MARK beside the answer which best represents your feelings. PLEASE DO NOT SIGN YOUR NAME ON THE QUESTIONNAIRE SINCE YOUR ANSWERS WILL BE CONSIDERED CONFIDENTIAL. THANK-YOU FOR YOUR COOPERATION.

SECTION ONE: First of all, we would like to obtain some information about you. Most of the questions will only require you to check or circle the response wich is best for you. Where there are blanks, we would like you to fill them out as completely as possible.

[1:10-11] 1. What is your age? ______________________________.

[1:12-13] 2. What ethnic group do you belong to? ____________________.

[1:14-15] 3. What is your religious affiliation? ____________________.

[1:16-21] 4. Where were you born? ______________City, ______________ ______________Province/State ______________Country.

[1:22-23] 5. What was the highest grade in school that you completed? Please circle the appropriate answer:

Grade or Elementary School:	1	2	3	4	5	6
Junior High School:	7	8	9			
High School:	10	11	12			
College:	1	2	3	4		
University:	1	2	3	4		
Graduate Studies:	1	2	3	4		

[1:24] Highest Degree held: ______________________________.

[1:25] Other education (i.e. vocational training): ______________ ______________________________.

[1:26] 6. Are you employed outside the home?
☐ 2. NO; IF NO, please go to question 7.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following questions:

[1:27-28] a. What type of work do you do? ______________________________ ______________________________ ______________________________.

[1:29] b. Are you employed: ☐ 1. Full-time or ☐ 2. Part-time?

[1:30] c. What is your approximate take-home pay PER MONTH (i.e. after your taxes and other deductions have been taken off)?
☐ 1. Less than $300
☐ 2. $300 to $600
☐ 3. $600 to $900
☐ 4. $900 to $1,500
☐ 5. Over $1,500

[1:31] d. Do you give the money you earn to your husband or boyfriend?
☐ 1. NO
☐ 2. YES

[1:32] 7. Have you ever worked at a paid job?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 8.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following questions:

[1:33-34] a. What type of work did you do? ____________________
____
____.

[1:35-40] b. When were you last employed? ________________(date).

[1:41-44] c. What was your approximate take-home pay per month?
(i.e. your net income): ________________________.

[1:45] d. Was this work: ☐ 1.Full-time or ☐ 2.Part-time?

[1:46] 8. While you were together, did your husband/boyfriend give you a money allowance on a regular basis?
☐ 1. NO
☐ 2. YES

[1:47-50] 9. If your husband/boyfriend gave you an allowance, how much would he give you? ____________________________.

[1:51] 10. If your husband/boyfriend gave you an allowance, would he ask you to account for how it was spent?
☐ 1. NO
☐ 2. YES

[1:52] 11. What is your present marital status?
☐ 1. Married
☐ 2. Common-law
☐ 3. Single
☐ 4. Divorced
☐ 5. Widowed
☐ 6. Separated

12. IF YOU ARE MARRIED then answer the following questions:
[1:53-58] a. What was the date of your marriage? ______________.
[1:59-60] b. How long have you been married? ______________.
[1:61] c. Was your marriage an 'arranged' marriage?
☐ 1. NO
☐ 2. YES

[1:62-63] 13. IF YOU ARE LIVING (COMMON-LAW) WITH SOMEONE, how long have you lived together? ________________________.

[1:64] 14. Is the person who battered or physically abused you your:
☐ 1. Husband
☐ 2. Ex-husband
☐ 3. Boyfriend
☐ 4. Ex-boyfriend
☐ 5. Someone else (who): ___
________________________.

[1:65-70] 15. When was the first time you saw your husband/boyfriend behave violently? (approx. date)______________________.

[1:71-72] a. What did he do? ______________________________
____.

[1:73-74] b. How did you feel about his behavior? ____________
____
____.

[1:75] c. Did you do anything about his behavior?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 16.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, answer the following:

[1:76-77] What did you do? ______________________________
____.

[1:78] 16. Are you still living with your husband/boyfriend?
☐ 1. NO
☐ 2. YES

[1:79] 17. Prior to this time, have you ever left him?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 18.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following questions:

[2:01-02] a. How many times have you left him? _______________.

[2:03-04] b. What was the longest time you stayed away? _________.

[2:05-06] c. Where did you go? ___________________________.

[2:07-08] d. Why did you return? _________________________.

[2:09] 18. When you left this last time, was it:
☐ 1. Before an assault?
☐ 2. After an assault?
☐ 3. Neither.

[2:10-11] 19. IF YOU LEFT AFTER AN ASSAULT, how long after the assault did you leave? ____________________(approx. time).

[2:12] 20. Have you ever been married to someone else?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 21.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following:

[2:13] How did the marriage end?
☐ 1. Divorce
☐ 2. Separation
☐ 3. Death
☐ 4. Other, explain:________
____
______________________________.

[2:14] 21. Have you ever lived with someone else?
[___] 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 22.
[___] 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following:

[2:15-16] How did the relationship end? ______________________________.
____.

[2:17] 22. Were you ever assaulted by any other man?
[___] 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 23.
[___] 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following questions:

[2:18-19] a. What was the individual's relationship to you? ________
____.

[2:20-26] b. When did he assault you? (i.e. time of day, date, etc.)
____

[2:27-28] c. What did he do? ______________________________________
____
____

[2:29] 23. Do you have any children?
[___] 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 24.
[___] 2. YES; IF YES, please fill in the following table:

(IF YES PUT CHECK-MARK IN BLANK)

		Age	Sex	Live with you?	Is the child your husband's/ boyfriends's stepchild?
[2:30-35]	1.	____	____	__________	______________
[2:36-41]	2.	____	____	__________	______________
[2:42-47]	3.	____	____	__________	______________
[2:48-53]	4.	____	____	__________	______________
[2:54-59]	5.	____	____	__________	______________
[2:60-65]	6.	____	____	__________	______________

[2:66] 24. Do you have any stepchildren who have made their home with you?
[___] 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 25.
[___] 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following:

[2:67-68] How many stepchildren are living with you? ______________.

[2:69] 25. When you were 16, did both your parents live in the same house as you lived?
[___] 1. YES, IF YES, please go to question 26.
[___] 2. NO, IF NO, please answer the following:

[2:70] Why did you live separately from your parents? ___________
____
____

[2:71] 26. What is the marital status of your parents?
☐ 1. Married
☐ 2. Common-law
☐ 3. Single
☐ 4. Divorced
☐ 5. Widowed
☐ 6. Separated
☐ 7. Don't know
☐ 8. Remarried
☐ 9. Other, please explain: ____________________

[2:72] 27. Was there ever any physical violence between your parents?
☐ 1. Never
☐ 2. Sometimes
☐ 3. Often
☐ 4. Always
☐ 5. Don't know

[2:73] 28. Did you ever see or hear you mother being beaten by your father?
☐ 1. DON'T REMEMBER; please go to question 29.
☐ 2. NO; IF NO, please go to question 29.
☐ 3. YES; IF YES, please answer the following:

[2:74-75] Please describe what you heard or saw: ____________________
____
____________________.

[2:76] 29. When you were a child, were you physically punished?
☐ 1. Never
☐ 2. Sometimes
☐ 3. Often
☐ 4. Always
☐ 5. Don't remember
☐ 6. Other, please explain: ____________________
____

[2:77] 30. If you were physically punished, what kind of punishment was it?
☐ 1. Mild (occasional slap, etc.)
☐ 2. Moderate (spankings, etc.)
☐ 3. Severe (beatings, etc.)
☐ 4. Was never physically punished

[2:78] 31. If you were beaten as a child, who usually did this to you?
☐ 1. Father
☐ 2. Mother
☐ 3. Brother
☐ 4. Sister
☐ 5. Both Mother and Father
☐ 6. Other, please explain: ____________________
____

[2:79] 32. What is the general condition of your health?
☐ 1. Excellent; If excellent, please go to question 33.
☐ 2. Average
☐ 3. Poor

[3:01-03] IF YOUR HEALTH IS AVERAGE OR POOR, please describe any conditions which cause it to be so: ____________________
____
____
____

[3:04-05] 33. Do you have any kind of medical condition for which you take prescribed drugs (i.e. by your physician) or any other medicine (please check as many as apply)?

☐ 1. Heart Disease
☐ 2. Epilepsy
☐ 3. Diabetes
☐ 4. Insomnia
☐ 5. Bad Nerves
☐ 6. Migraine Headaches
☐ 7. Depression
☐ 8. Arthritis
☐ 9. Other, explain: ____________________
____
____

[3:06] 34. Do you use other drugs for pleasure or mood changes?

☐ 1. Never
☐ 2. Sometimes
☐ 3. Often
☐ 4. Always
☐ 5. Other, please explain: ____________________.

[3:07] 35. Do you think you may be addicted to these other drugs? (i.e. non-medical)

☐ 1. NO
☐ 2. YES

[3:08] 36. Do you drink alcoholic beverages?

☐ 1. Never
☐ 2. Sometimes
☐ 3. Often
☐ 4. Always
☐ 5. Other, please explain: ____________________

[3:09] 37. Do you think you may be an alcoholic?

☐ 1. NO
☐ 2. YES

[3:10] 38. At present, are you pregnant?

☐ 1. NO
☐ 2. YES

SECTION TWO: The following questions refer to your husband or boyfriend (i.e. the person who battered you). Most of the questions will only require you to check or circle the response which is best for you. If you don't know or can't remember something about your husband or boyfriend, please leave the question blank.

[4:01-02] 1. What is your husband's/boyfriend's age? ____________________.

[4:03-04] 2. What is your husband's/boyfriend's ethnic group? ____________________.

[4:05-06] 3. What is your husband's/boyfriends religious affiliation? ____________________.

[4:07-08] 4. Where was your husband/boyfriend born? ____________City, ____________Province/State ____________Country.

[4:09-10] 5. What was the highest grade in school that your husband/boyfriend completed? Please circle the appropriate answer:

Grade or Elementary School:	1	2	3	4	5	6
Junior High School:	7	8	9			
High School:	10	11	12			
College:	1	2	3	4		
University:	1	2	3	4		
Graduate Studies:	1	2	3	4		

[4:11] Highest Degree held: ____________________.

[4:12] Other education (i.e. vocational training): ____________________.

[4:13] 6. While you were together, was your husband/boyfriend employed?

☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 7.

☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following questions:

[4:14-15] a. What type of work did he do? ____________________

[4:16] b. Was he employed: ☐ 1. Full-time or ☐ 2. Part-time?

[4:17] c. What was his approximate take-home pay PER MONTH (i.e. after his taxes and other deductions were taken off)? taxes and other deductions were taken off)?

☐ 1. Less than $300	☐ 4. $900 to $1,500
☐ 2. $300 to $600	☐ 5. Over $1,500
☐ 3. $600 to $900	☐ 6. Don't know.

[4:18] 7. Is your husband/boyfriend presently employed?
☐ 1. DON'T KNOW; please go to question 8.
☐ 2. NO, IF NO; please go to question 8.
☐ 3. YES, IF YES; please answer the following questions:

[4:19-20] a. What type of work does he do? ______________________________
____
____.

[4:21] b. Is he employed:
☐ 1. Full-time
☐ 2. Part-time
☐ 3. Don't know

[4:22] c. What is his approximate take-home pay?
☐ 1. Less than $300
☐ 2. $300 to $600
☐ 3. $600 to $900
☐ 4. $900 to $1,500
☐ 5. Over $1,500
☐ 5. Don't know

[4:23] 8. If your husband/boyfriend is not employed, what are the sources of his income (i.e. welfare)? ____________________________
____.

[4:24] 9. Did you and your husband/boyfriend own the home you lived in together?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 10.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following question:

[4:25-29] What was the approximate value of your home? ______________.

[4:30-31] 10. What was the distance between the home you shared with your husband/boyfriend from any of your own relatives?
______________________________(miles).

[4:32-33] 11. How many times have you moved since you were married or first lived together? ____________________(number of times).

[4:34] 12. Was your husband/boyfriend ever married to someone else?
[___] 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 13.
[___] 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following questions

[4:35] a. How did his former marriage end?
[___] 1. Divorce [___] 4. Don't know
[___] 2. Separation [___] 5. Other, explain: ___
[___] 3. Death ______________________________.

[4:36] b. Was he physically violent with his previous wife?
[___] 1. NO [___] 3. Don't know
[___] 2. YES

[4:37] c. If he was physically violent with his previous wife/girlfiend, were you aware of it before you began livig with him?
[___] 1. NO [___] 3. Was not physically violen
[___] 2. YES with his previous wife or girlfriend

[4:38] d. Did your husband/boyfriend have any children by a forme marriage?
[___] 1. DON'T KNOW; please go to question 13.
[___] 2. NO; IF NO, please go to question 13.
[___] 3. YES; IF YES, please answer the following:

[4:39] How many children did he have? ____________________

[4:40] 13. When your husband/boyfriend was 6, did both of his parents live in the same house that he did?
[___] 1. DON'T KNOW; please go to question 14.
[___] 2. NO; IF NO; please go to question 14.
[___] 3. YES; IF YES, please answer the following question:

[4:41] Please explain, to the best of your knowledge, why he didn't live with his parents? ____________________
____
____

[4:42] 14. What was the marital status of your husband's/boyfriend's parents at the time you were together?
[___] 1. Married [___] 6. Separated
[___] 2. Common-law [___] 7. Don't know
[___] 3. Single [___] 8. Other, please explain:
[___] 4. Divorced ______________________________
[___] 5. Widowed ______________________________

[4:43] 15. Was there ever any physical violence between your husband's/boyfriend's parents?
[___] 1. Never [___] 4. Always
[___] 2. Sometimes [___] 5. Don't know
[___] 3. Often

[4:44] 16. To the best of your knowledge, had your husband/boyfriend ever seen or heard his mother being beaten by his father?

☐ 1. DON'T KNOW; please go to question 17.
☐ 2. NO; IF NO, please go to question 17.
☐ 3. YES; IF YES, please answer the following question:

[4:45-46] Please try to recall and describe what he told you about those occasions: ____
____
____
____
____.

[4:47] 17. When your husband/boyfriend was a child, was he physically punished?

☐ 1. Never
☐ 2. Sometimes
☐ 3. Often
☐ 4. Always
☐ 5. Don't know
☐ 6. Other, please explain:
____
______________________________.

[4:48] 18. If your husband/boyfriend was physically punished, what kind of punishment was it?

☐ 1. Mild (occasional slap, etc.)
☐ 2. Moderate (spankings, etc.)
☐ 3. Severe (beatings, etc.)
☐ 4. Was never physically punished
☐ 5. Don't know

[4:49] 19. Do you think your husband/boyfriend received unusual or harsh types of punishment when he was a child?

☐ 1. DON'T KNOW; If so, please go to question 20.
☐ 2. NO; IF NO, please go to question 20.
☐ 3. YES; IF YES, please answer the following question:

[4:50] Why do you think he received unusual or harsh types of punishment? ____
____
____.

[4:51] 20. As a child, was your husband/boyfriend prone to having physical fights with other children (i.e. brothers, sisters, friends)?

☐ 1. DON'T KNOW; please go to question 21.
☐ 2. NO; IF NO, please go to question 21.
☐ 3. YES; IF YES, please answer the following question:

[4:52] To the best of your knowledge, how often did he fight with other children?

☐ 1. Never
☐ 2. Sometimes
☐ 3. Often
☐ 4. Always
☐ 5. Don't know
☐ 6. Other, please explain:
____
____

[4:53] 21. To the best of your knowledge, did your husband/boyfriend ever physically abuse any members of his family?
☐ 1. DON'T KNOW, please go to question 22.
☐ 2. NO; IF NO, please go to question 22.
☐ 3. YES; IF YES, please answer the following questions:

[4:54] a. Who, in his family, did he physically abuse? __________
____
____

[4:55] b. How often did he physcially abuse them?
☐ 1. Never ☐ 5. Don't know
☐ 2. Sometimes ☐ 6. Other, please explain:
☐ 3. Often __________________
☐ 4. Always __________________.

[4:56] 22. What was the general condition of your husband's/boyfriend's health?
☐ 1. Excellent; If excellent, please go to question 23.
☐ 2. Average
☐ 3. Poor
☐ 4. Don't know

[4:57] IF YOUR HUSBAND'S/BOYFRIEND'S HEALTH WAS AVERAGE OR POOR, please describe any conditions which casused it to be so:
____
____
____.

[4:58-59] 23. Did your husband/boyfriend have any kind of medical condition for which he took prescribed drugs (i.e. by his physician) or any other medicine?
☐ 1. Heart Disease ☐ 7. Depression
☐ 2. Epilepsy ☐ 8. Arthritis
☐ 3. Diabetes ☐ 9. Other, explain:
☐ 4. Insomnia __________________
☐ 5. Bad Nerves __________________
☐ 6. Migraine Headaches __________________.

[4:60] 24. Did your husband/boyfriend use any other drugs for pleasure or mood changes?
☐ 1. Never ☐ 4. Always
☐ 2. Sometimes ☐ 5. Other, please explain:
☐ 3. Often __________________.

[4:61] 25. Did your husband/boyfriend drink alcoholic beverages?
☐ 1. Never ☐ 4. Always
☐ 2. Sometimes ☐ 5. Other, please explain:
☐ 3. Often __________________.

[4:62] 26. When your husband/boyfriend battered you, was he under the influence of ALCOHOL?

☐ 1. Never
☐ 2. Sometimes
☐ 3. Often
☐ 4. Always
☐ 5. Don't know
☐ 6. Other: ____________________.

[4:63] 27. When your husband/boyfriend battered you, was he under the influence of DRUGS?

☐ 1. Never
☐ 2. Sometimes
☐ 3. Often
☐ 4. Always
☐ 5. Don't know
☐ 6. Other: ____________________.

[4:64] 28. Was your husband/boyfriend a "dry alcoholic". In other words, a man who used to drink very heavily, but doesn't drink anymore?

☐ 1. NO
☐ 2. YES
☐ 3. DON'T KNOW

[4:65] 29. Was your husband/boyfriend addicted to drugs?

☐ 1. NO
☐ 2. YES
☐ 3. DON'T KNOW

[4:66] 30. Do you think there was any connection between your husband's/boyfriend's use of alcohol or drugs and his attacks on you?

☐ 1. DON'T KNOW; If so, please go to question 31.
☐ 2. NO; IF NO, please go to question 31.
☐ 3. YES; IF YES, please answer the following question:

[4:67] Please explain why you think there is a connection: ________
____
____.

[4:68] 31. To the best of your knowledge, has your husband/boyfriend ever committed any other violent acts towards other people, animals, or objects?

☐ 1. DON'T KNOW, please go to question 32.
☐ 2. NO; IF NO, please go to question 32.
☐ 3. YES, IF YES, please answer the following question:

[4:69] Please describe these 'violent acts': ____________________
____
____
____.

[4:70] 32. Did your husband/boyfriend ever serve in the military?

[___] 1. DON'T KNOW, please go to question 33.
[___] 2. NO; IF NO, please go to question 33.
[___] 3. YES; IF YES, please answer the following questions

[4:71] a. What did he do in the military? ______________________________

____

[4:72-73] b. How long did he serve? ______________________________(years)

[4:74] 33. Was your husband/boyfriend ever arrested on any charges other than assaulting you?

[___] 1. DON'T KNOW, please go to next section.
[___] 2. NO; IF NO, please go to next section.
[___] 3. YES; IF YES, please answer the following questions:

[4:75-76] a. What were these charges? ______________________________

____

[4:77] b. Was he convicted of any of these charges?

[___] 1. DON'T KNOW
[___] 2. NO
[___] 3. YES

[4:78-79] c. What sentence did he receive? ______________________________

____

SECTION THREE: This section deals with the type and nature of the injuries you have sustained. A number of the following questions require that you 'describe' or 'explain further'. When you come across these types of questions we would ask you to fill them out as completely and fully as possible.

[5:01-02] 1. What kind of physical injuries have you received as a result of the physical violence that your husband/boyfriend has inflicted upon you? (For example: severe bruises, broken bones, cuts, black eyes, sexual abuse, whatever it was that resulted from a battering):

[5:03] 2. Did you try to hide your injuries?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 3.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following questions:

[5:04] a. How did you hide your injuries?

[5:05] b. Why did you hide your injuries?

[5:06] 3. How often were you attacked?
☐ 1. Once a week
☐ 2. More than once a week
☐ 3. Once a month
☐ 4. Other, How frequently?

[5:07-08] 4. How long, on the average, would an attack last (i.e. one blow, 5 minutes, prolonged beating)? Please describe:

[5:09] 5. Below is a scale on which we would like you to indicate how severe the attacks were. This scale ranges from 1, indicating not severe (i.e. slap or shove), to 5, indicatin extremely severe (i.e. you were unconscious). Please circl the number which best describes the severity of attacks.

1	2	3	4	5
(not severe)		(moderately severe)		(extremely severe

[5:10] 6. Was there a particular part of your body which he usually attacked?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 7.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following question:

[5:11-14] Which part did he attack? Please check as many as apply.
☐ 1. Head
☐ 2. Face
☐ 3. Neck
☐ 4. Breasts
☐ 5. Arms
☐ 6. Back
☐ 7. Stomach
☐ 8. Buttocks
☐ 9. Legs
☐ 10. Genitals
☐ 11. Other, please explain: ______________________

[5:15] 7. Were you ever sexually assaulted by him?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 8.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following question:

[5:16-17] How often did he sexually assault you? ______________

[5:18] 8. Were you pregnant at the time you marr[illegible]d or began a relationship with your husband/boyfriend?
☐ 1. NO
☐ 2. YES

[5:19] 9. Were you ever battered during pregnancy?
☐ 1. NO
☐ 2. YES
☐ 3. Never pregnant

10. In your judgement, what factors are responsible for causing the battering(s)?
[5:20] a. Argument over money: ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:21] b. Argument over in-laws: ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:22] c. Your pregnancy: ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:23] d. His jealousy: ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:24] e. Your jealousy: ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:25] f. Your housekeeping: ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:26] g. Child care: ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:27] h. Going out: ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:28] i. Drugs: ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:29] j. No reason at all: ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:30] k. Other reasons, please specify: ______________________
____

[5:31] 11. Did long verbal arguments go on before the attacks?
☐ 1. Never ☐ 4. Always
☐ 2. Sometimes ☐ 5. Other, please explain:
☐ 3. Often

[5:32] 12. To the best of your knowledge, did you say or do anything which would trigger an attack?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 13.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following question:

[5:33] Please explain what it is that you think triggered an attack:

[5:34] 13. Did you know beforehand that an attack was going to occur?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 14.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following questions:

[5:35] a. How did you know that an attack was about to happen?

[5:36] b. How did you feel before the attack?

[5:37] 14. After an attack, did your relationship with your husband/boyfriend change in any way?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 15.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following questions:

[5:38] a. How did the relationship change?

[5:39] b. How did you feel toward your husband/boyfriend right after an assault had taken place?

[5:40] c. How did you feel toward your husband/boyfriend 4 to 6 weeks after an assault had taken place?

[5:41] 15. Did you say or do anything to prevent an attack?
☐ 1. NO
☐ 2. YES

[5:42] Please explain why or what you did or did not do to preven
an attack? ____________________

[5:43] 16. Do you think you deserved the beating(s)?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 17.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following question

[5:44] Why do you think you deserved the beating(s)? ____________________

[5:45] 17. Once an attack began, did you attempt to defend yourself?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 18.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following question

[5:46] What did you do to defend7 yourself? ____________________

[5:47] 18. Did the beatings increase or decrease in number and/or amount and type of violence since you began living together? Please check the response which best describes your situation.
☐ 1. Increased in number and increased in violence.
☐ 2. Increased in number but decreased in violence.
☐ 3. Decreased in number and increased in violence.
☐ 4. Decreased in number but decreased in violence.
☐ 5. Stayed the same in number.
☐ 6. Stayed the same in violence.
☐ 7. There was only one occurence of violence.
☐ 8. Other, please explain: ____________________.

[5:48] 19. When your husband/boyfriend assaulted you, what would he usually use?
☐ 1. His hands or fists
☐ 2. An instrument
☐ 3. Other, please explain: ____________________
____________________.

[5:49] 20. During an attack, were you ever threatened with any type of weapon?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 21.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following question:

[5:50] What type of weapon did he threaten you with?
☐ 1. Gun
☐ 2. Knife
☐ 3. Other; please specify: ____________________
____________________.

[5:51] 21. Did your husband/boyfriend ever use a weapon during an assault?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 22.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following question:

[5:52] What type of weapon did he use?
☐ 1. Gun
☐ 2. Knife
☐ 3. Other; please specify: ____________________
____________________.

[5:53] 22. Did you ever threaten your husband/boyfriend with a weapon?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 23.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following question:

[5:54] What type of weapon did you threaten him with?
☐ 1. Gun
☐ 2. Knife
☐ 3. Other; please specify: ____________________
____________________.

[5:55] 23. After an assault, would ever tell anyone about it?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO; please go to question 24.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following questions:

[5:56] a. Who would you tell? ____________________.

[5:57-58] b. Why did you tell that particular person? ____________________
____
____________________.

[5:59] c. What advise would they give you? ____________________
____
____
____

[5:60] d. Did they offer you an help (please describe)? ____________________
____
____
____

[5:61] 24. Did you ever threaten your husband/boyfriend with divorce?

☐ 1. NO

[5:62] IF NO, Please explain why: ____________________

☐ 2. YES

[5:63] IF YES, Please explain why: ____________________

[5:64] 25. During an assault, was there any other adult present?

☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to section four.

☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following questions

[5:65] a. Who was this other person? ____________________

[5:66] b. What did they do? ____________________

26. Did you ever seek professional outside help from any of the following people?

[5:67] a. Police ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:68] b. Lawyer ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:69] c. Doctor ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:70] d. Minister ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:71] e. Psychologist ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:72] f. Social Worker ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:73] g. Nurse ☐ 1. NO ☐ 2. YES
[5:74-75] h. Other, please specify who: ____________________

[5:76-78] 27. If you asked for help from any of the above (question 26) people, what kind of help did you receive? Please explain: ____________________

SECTION FOUR: The following list of items are some feelings which we think you might have experienced after an assault had occured. Please circle the number which best describes the way you felt. There are no right or wrong answers....only your feelings.

			A very great deal	Quite a lot	Hardly any at all	Non
[6:01]	a.	Surprise	1	2	3	4
[6:02]	b.	Shame	1	2	3	4
[6:03]	c.	Fear	1	2	3	4
[6:04]	d.	Relieved	1	2	3	4
[6:05]	e.	Powerless	1	2	3	4
[6:06]	f.	Unattractive	1	2	3	4
[6:07]	g.	Revengeful	1	2	3	4
[6:08]	h.	Hatred	1	2	3	4
[6:09]	i.	Trapped	1	2	3	4
[6:10]	j.	Self-blame	1	2	3	4
[6:11]	k.	Depression	1	2	3	4
[6:12]	l.	Humiliated	1	2	3	4
[6:13]	m.	Guilty	1	2	3	4
[6:14]	n.	Outrage	1	2	3	4
[6:15]	o.	Confused	1	2	3	4
[6:16]	p.	Alone	1	2	3	4
[6:17]	q.	Unworthy	1	2	3	4

SECTION FIVE: The following questions are very personal, but please try to answer them as objectively as you can. Remember, your answers are strictly confidential, there are no "right" and no "wrong" answers, and no one is making any judgements about you. Please give the answers which best describe your treatment of your children.

[6:18] 1. Were there children present when you were assaulted?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 2.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following question

[6:19] Were they your children or stepchildren? Please describe who was present: ______________________________
____
____

[6:20] 2. If there were children living in the same home as you and your husband/boyfriend, were they ever assaulted by him?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 3.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following question

[6:21] a. Which children were assaulted? ______________________________
____

[6:22] b. Was the child-beating:
☐ 1. Mild (i.e. slap)
☐ 2. Moderate (i.e. spanking, bruising)
☐ 3. Severe (i.e. broken bones)

[6:23] c. Was the child or children assaulted at the same time, or around the same time, that you were assaulted?
☐ 1. NO
☐ 2. YES

[6:24] d. Was the childs' assault directly connected with your husbands'/boyfriends' assault on you? In other words, did the child somehow get into the middle of things, i.e. try to defend you etc.?
☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 3.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following:

[6;25] Please describe what happened? ______________________________
____
____
____
____

[6:26-27] 3. How do you usually discipline your child or children? (Please give example).

[6:28] 4. Do you usually physically discipline your children?

☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 5.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following questions:

[6:29] a. Please indicate, by checking the appropriate response below, how hard you discipline your children?

☐ 1. Mild (very light)
☐ 2. Moderate (average)
☐ 3. Severe (very hard)

[6:30] b. Please indicate, by checking the appropriate response below, how frequently you discipline your children?

☐ 1. Seldom (less than once a week)
☐ 2. Occasionally (about once a week)
☐ 3. Frequently (daily)

[6:31] 5. Has any child living in the home you shared with your husband/boyfriend ever required any medical attention because of physical punishment given by you OR your husband/boyfriend?

☐ 1. NO; IF NO, please go to question 6.
☐ 2. YES; IF YES, please answer the following questions:

[6:32-33] a. Please describe the injuries which required medical attention:

[6:34] b. Who inflicted the injuries on the child, you or your husband/boyfriend?

[6:35] c. Was there any official action taken(i.e. questioning, police report, charges placed, etc.)?

☐ 1. NO

[6:36] IF NO, why not?

☐ 2. YES

[6:37] IF YES, please describe what happen:

[6:38] 6. Has any child who lived in the home you shared with your husband/boyfriend ever struck you?

[___] 1. NO

[___] 2. YES, If yes, please answer the following questions

[6:39-40] a. How old was this child at the time? ____________

[6:41] b. What sex was the child?

[___] 1. Female

[___] 2. Male

[6:42] c. Please describe what happen at that time: ____________

Thank you very much for your time and cooperation. Your assistance in filling out this questionnaire is appreciated very much. If you have any comments that you would like to make, please feel free to make them in the space below.

DISCOVERY HOUSE RESEARCH

FOCUSED INTERVIEW GUIDE FOR RESIDENTS ADMISSION

Confidential

1. How did you first hear about Discovery House?

   probes: from whom, where, how long ago, why, what did they say.

2. Were any attempts made to make other arrangements for yourself and family before considering a move to Discovery House?

   probes: (if respondent answers yes) what were these attempts, what happened.

3. Did you have to wait prior to gaining admission to Discovery House?

   probes: if yes were they referred elsewhere, how long was the wait, what happened.

4. Tell me in your own words what brought about your application for admission to Discovery House?

   probes: most important incidents or factors that helped them decide.

5. Who was most helpful to you in making the application to Discovery House:

   probes: who, agency significant others their relationship, what aspects were helpful.

6. Who was the least helpful to you in making the application to Discovery House?

   probes: who, agency significant others their relationship, what aspects were not helpful.

7. Was your spouse aware of your application to Discovery House?

   probes: if aware what were his feelings about this application; if not what were the reasons.

8. What did you think about prior to your first screening interview with the intake worker?

   probes: fears, concerns, feelings.

9. What kinds of things did you talk about in your first screening interview with the intake worker?

   probes: eligibility requirements, goals and purposes of Discovery House, time frame, house rules, community resources.

10. What did you think about right after this screening interview?

   probes: concerns, questions, feelings.

11. Did the intake worker create the kind of atmosphere where you felt free to talk over your concerns and feelings about your situation?

   probes: knowledge of worker re women battery, child battery, helpfulness, comfort level, ability to help respondent understand purpose of Discovery House.

12. After your intake interview and your acceptance to Discovery House what were your thoughts about making the move?

   probes: any second thoughts, indecisive, fears for safety talk it over with anyone else, needed more information.

13. Did you have any specific concerns about your children having to move into Discovery House?

   probes: what did they tell their children about the move, how did they react, problems with schools, day care, emotional or behavioural problems.

14. When you first moved into Discovery House what were you able to bring with you?

   probes: money, clothing, family and personal pocessions, did you go back under police protection to secure belongings, if so what happened; did someone else pick up pocessions.

15. What did you expect Discovery House would be like?

   probes: physical setting, atmosphere, staff, other residents, how were expectations different from what the respondent expected, views on mandatory aspects of program.

16. In what ways do you think Discovery House is different then other women's crisis shelters in Calgary?

   probes: (past experiences at other shelters) differences between 1st stage and 2nd stage shelters and what this means to them.

17. What kinds of things do you hope to achieve while at Discovery House for yourself and your children?

probes: needs to be met, goals, what life will be like 6 months from now, time she expects to stay, position regarding decision to stay or leave spouse.

18. What are your views on the damage deposit you must pay to move into Discovery House and the rent you must pay?

probes: is it too much? where did you get the money?

19. Who knows where you are right now?

probes: family, friends, co-workers, type of contact, fears if any about their safety.

20. Has your spouse made any contact with you or you with him since you moved in? or since you moved away from battering situation.

probes: type of contact, messages, spouses' reactions, fears and concerns about this.

21. What are your feelings now?

probes: worries, fears, lonliness, relief, security etc.

DISCOVERY HOUSE RESEARCH

FOCUSED INTERVIEW GUIDE FOR RESIDENTS AT MID-WAY OF STAY

1. What is it like living at Discovery House?

   probes: Whats an average day; whats' good/bad about being here, atmosphere, house rules, is it what you expected, if different what are these differences.

2. What do you think about the overall physical characteristics of Discovery House?

   probes: community location, separate suites, evaluation of amenities in suites, telephones, play areas for children, degree of privacy, security systems.

3. How would you describe your relationships to the other residents?

   probes: other women helpful, supportive/not so helpful, in what ways helpful/not so helpful; formation of friendships; feelings of involvement or being left out; any cultural or language barriers; problems with other children.

4. To date what do you think of the program being offered at Discovery House?

   probes: explore view of manditory participation in counselling and education programs; scheduling and amount of time devoted to all programs; what they like and dislike about each program (counselling, education, recreation, child care, volunteer program). Most useful.least useful program.

5. Up until now how would you describe your experiences with the staff at Discovery House?

   probes: explore areas of knowledge, helpfulness, understanding accessibility, suppportiveness, confidentiality, views of team approach, major difficulties, like most about, like least about.

6. Since you have been at Discovery House you have probably been involved with other social agencies. Could you please describe what your experiences have been with these agencies.

   probes: who, what, when, where, most/least useful experiences, feelings about, attitudes towards women, quality of service.

7. How do you feel your children have adjusted to living at Discovery House.

   probes: nature of relationship to children, behavioural and emotional problems, school, day care experience, childs involvement in child care program, major difficulties, positive aspects of experience.

8. What is your relationship like with your spouse at this point in time.

probes: do you have contact, nature of contact, his contact with children, spouse involved in counselling, your thinking on staying or leaving your husband.

9. To date do you feel that you are making any progress towards the resolution of your situation.

probes: if yes, what progress, in what ways, what have been the greatest difficulties if no what have been the problems. What has been the contribution of Discovery House to this process in any; what are the greatest challenges facing you now?

CONFIDENTIAL

DISCOVERY HOUSE RESEARCH

FOCUSED INTERVIEW GUIDE AT RESIDENTS DEPARTURE

Now that you are leaving Discovery House we would like your help in assessing our programs.

1. Did you think your own counsellor provided your with adequate information that was useful for yourself and your children?

   probes: knowledge about battering, community resources, child development ...

2. Did you feel that your counsellor was able to create an atmosphere where you felt comfortable exploring your situation.

   probes: did you see a counsellor as a friend or professional, did you leave things out of interviews, did you feel preasured to make decisions. Were your own expectations and the counsellors the same/differnt, how different, at what point did you feel you were making your own decisions.

3. Did the fact that your counsellor belonged to a team and shared information about you with them affect you in anyway? probes: sense of privacy, confidentiality prevented you from disclosing some information.

4. What were the most useful and least useful aspects of your counselling sessions.

   probes: were needs met, which needs, which needs not met, mandatory issues.changes you would make should be available for spouse.

5. Did you feel that the group counselling sessions were relevant to your own situation?

   probes: appropriateness of topics, value of the women's contributions, self disclosure in a group, views on combining in house residents and those who have returned home, size of group, format.

6. Do you think that the group counsellor was able to create an atmosphere where you the other women felt comfortable exploring personal issues together?

   probes: did you leave things out, did you feel preasured, was the group upsetting, did you feel support/no support from other women, confidentiality.

7. What were the most useful and least useful aspects of the group counselling sessions for you?

   probes: mandatory, time factor, quality of experiences changes they would make, should be available for spouse.

8. What did you think of the educational programs that were offered two nights a week.

   probes: topics, depth and breadth of, instructors attitudes, ability of information for you, changes you would make, would you go if you didn't have to.

9. What do you think of the "new start program" where you have been assigned your own volunteer

   probes: when assigned, how often do you see her, where do you see her, how helpful has she been/not been, do you want her to visit when you leave, what changes would you make.

10. What is your impression of the child care programs

    probes: day care and volunteer, participation, frequency, effects on your relationship with your child, changes you would make.

11. Overall, which was the most useful programs and which was the least useful program in meeting you and your childrens needs.

    probes: why, what could have been discarded/kept, changed.

12. Now that you are leaving could you explain how you came to make your decision to leave Discovery House.

    probes: when made, affairs in order, feeling better/worse about self, feeling safe, tired of living at home, pressure from others, specific events at house, feelings about leaving.

13. What are your plans now that you are leaving?

    A. Living with husband

       i) Why have you decided to return to your spouse?

          probes:promised changes, spouse has been in counselling or other programs, miss him, lonely, afraid to go on own, wants to try again, feels more secure, for the benefit of the children.

       ii) Do you think things will be different for you and your children once you are home?

          probes: discontinuation of battering, more understanding of self, access to services, knowing there is an escape, difficulties you expect etc., different living arrangements.

       iii) Will you still continue in the Discovery House group counselling program.

          probes: reasons for decision, what you think you might achieve by continuous involvement.

B) Others

i) What arrangements have you made for yourself and your children for returning to the community.

probes: housing, finances, education/job, school child care, security precaution, legal action major difficulties implementing these plans.

ii) Will you continue to see your husband although you will not be living with him.

probes: yes/no, reasons, feelings about.

iii) Will you still continue in the Discovery House group counselling program?

probes: reason for decision, what you think you might achieve by continued involvement.

14 What do you think has been the overall effect of the Discovery House experience on your children and your relationship to them.

probes: emotional, behaviour problems, changes your parenting skills, fears and hopes.

15. How would you describe your overall experience at Recovery House.

probes: best and worst experiences, view of time factor, enough, not enough. Changes you would make, would you do it again, personal change/no change, meeting of needs, feelings about etc.

16. What do you think will be the greatest challenges facing you when you leave?

probes: security, lonliness, independence financial etc.

17. What are you feeling about yourself now?

probes: fear, anxiety, confidence etc.

DISCOVERY HOUSE RESEARCH

FOCUSED INTERVIEW GUIDE - FOLLOW-UP

Confidential

1. It has been six months since you left Discovery House. Can you tell me in your own words what has happened to you since that time.

   probes: A. Separated from spouse: housing, finances, education/job, school, day care, friends, family, relationship to spouse, relationship to other men, ever been battered,

   B. With spouse: has situation changed at all, how, are you still being battered more/less not at all, course of change/no change, relationship to friends, family.

2. What have been the most challenging aspects of your experience since leaving Discovery House?

   probes: most difficult things to adjust to for yourself, children, lonliness, security, financial problems, relationships with other men or spouse, community reactions etc. Good-positive aspects of your experience.

3. How would you say your children are adjusting to their present situation.

   probes: are they still with you, how are they doing at home, school, in recreation, relationship to father, emotional/behaviour problems, showing signs of violence, what is your relationship like with them.

4. Since you have left Discovery House have you used any other social service?

   probes: what, when, why, frequency, quality of service, if not why not, are there gaps or services not offered you would like to see offered.

5. Have you continued your relationship with Discovery House in any way?

   probes: group counselling, new start program, informal visits with staff, other residents, do you see other residents who have left Discovery House? Reasons for the above, if not would they like other forms of involvement inside or outside Discovery House, feelings about etc.

6. In retrospect what do you think of your past experiences at Discovery House as they affect your present situation.

   probes: did anything help what was that, how would you have discarded certain things, changed them, what about time factor, needs met overall, what was not met, were your goals realistic, unrealistic etc.

7. What are you feeling about yourself now?

   probes: self confidence, independence, accomplishments etc.

8. What would you like your life to be like three months from now?

Schedule 1

Discovery House
Research Project

This questionnaire describes a number of common experiences most of you have in your daily lives. These questions are presented one at a time, and following each are several possible answers. Read the question carefully and then look at the possible answers. Choose the one that best describes what is happening to you right now. Please place a check mark after the answer that is closest to your own situation.

If at anytime, you are uncertain about the meaning of a question please ask the person who gave you the questionnaire.

We would like to thank you for your help in developing better services for battered women.

1. Are you presently living with:

   a) Your husband/boyfriend (the man who battered you?) _____
   b) Your family? _____
   c) Your friends? _____
   d) A shelter for women? _____
   e) On your own? _____

2. Do you meet with your husband/boyfriend

   a) At least once a week? _____
   b) At least once a month? _____
   c) At least once a year? _____
   d) never _____

3. Do you talk on the telephone with your husband/boyfriend

   a) At least once a week _____
   b) At least once a month _____
   c) At least once a year _____
   d) Never _____

4. Are you presently employed?

   a) No _____
   b) Yes _____

5. If you are not employed, are you presently seeking employment?

   a) No _____
   b) Yes _____

6. If you are not employed, are you enrolled in any training program that might lead to a job?

   a) No ______
   b) Yes ______
   c) Not applicable ______

7. Does your source of income come from

   a) Your husband/boyfriend ______
   b) Family ______
   c) Friends ______
   d) Social agency ______
   e) Your own job ______
   f) Your own savings ______

8. Do you have to tell any of the following people how you spend your:

a) Your husband/boyfriend ______
   b) Family ______
   c) Friends ______
   d) Social agency ______
   e) No one ______

9. Have you recently taken or commenced legal action against your husband/boyfriend?

   a) No ______
   b) Yes ______

10. Do you have your own friends other than those you shared with your husband/boyfriend?

   a) No ______
   b) Yes ______

11. Do you see your own friends at this time

   a) No ______
   b) Yes ______

12. Do you see your own family (brothers, sisters, parents)?

   a) Yes ______
   b) No ______

13. Are you involved in any leisure time activities with other people (tupper ware parties, jewelry parties, courses, sports, etc.)

a) No _____
b) Yes _____

14. Do you belong to any social organizations in the community (clubs, groups, etc.)

a) Yes _____
b) No _____

15. Do you go out with or date men other than your husband?

a) No _____
b) Yes _____

16. Do you have the freedom to go out when you feel like it?

a) No _____
b) Yes _____

17. Do you make most decisions regarding your child/children's welfare.

a) No _____
b) Yes _____

18. When you make major decisions about your child/children do you have to tell any of the following people.

a) Your husband/boyfriend _____
b) Your family _____
c) A social agency _____
d) No one but yourself _____

Schedule II

Below are some statements regarding the fears of battered women with which some women agree and others disagree. Please give us your own opinion about these items by placing a check in the blank closest to your opinion.

If you do not understand the question please ask the person who gave you the questionnaire.

1. I am afraid to answer the telephone.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

2. I worry about my husband finding me.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

3. I am afraid to let my children go out alone.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

4. It would be alright to tell my husband/boyfriend where I am presently living.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

5. I find myself looking over my shoulder when I go out.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

6. I go out accompanied by someone else.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

7. I make sure the doors are locked where I am living.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

8. I don't think it would be wise to tell my immediate family where I am living.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

9. I worry that my husband/spouse may harm my immediate family.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

10. I worry that my husband/spouse may harm my friends.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

11. It is all right to tell my friends where I am.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

12. I am afraid to answer the door.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

13. It is wise to tell someone where I am going and when I will be back.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

14. I go out alone at night.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

15. I check the streets before I go out.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

16. I go out during those times that I think my husband bill be busy.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

17. It would be all right to meet my husband/partner in a public place.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

18. I am afraid to live by myself.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

19. I am afraid of living in the city.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

20. I think it would be all right for my husband to have the children for the weekend.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

21. I do not think it wise to keep some weapon close at hand for self-defense.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

22. I worry about my husband/boyfriend gaining entrance to my present living accommodation.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

23. I am not worried about my husband gaining possession of the children by taking them from their school.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

24. An unlisted phone number is a good idea.

Strongly agree __ Agree __ Uncertain __ Disagree __ Strongly disagree __

Schedule III

Below are a number of statements about various topics. They have been collected from different groups of people and represent a variety of opinions. There are no right or wrong answers to this survey. Please circle a or b in each question according to the view closest to your own.

If you have any questions please ask the person who gave you the questionnaire.

1.a. Children get into trouble because their parents punish them too much.
  b. The trouble with most children nowadays is that their parents are too easy with them.

2.a. Many of the unhappy things in people's lives are partly due to bad luck.
  b. People's misfortunes result from the mistakes they make.

3.a. One of the major reasons why we have wars is because people don't take enough interest in politics.
  b. There will always be wars, no matter how hard people try to prevent them.

4.a. In the long run people get the respect they deserve in this world.
  b. Unfortunately, an individual's worth often passes unrecognized no matter how hard he tries.

5.a. The idea that teachers are unfair to students is nonsense.
  b. Most students don't realize the extent to which their grades are influenced by accidental happenings.

6.a. Without the right breaks one cannot be an effective leader.
  b. Capable people who fail to become leaders have not taken advantage of their opportunities.

7.a. No matter how hard you try some people just don't like you.
  b. People who can't get others to like them don't understand how to get along with others.

8.a. Heredity plays the major role in determining one's personality.
  b. It is one's experiences in life which determine what one is like.

9.a. I have often found that what is going to happen will happen.
  b. Trusting to fate has never turned out as well for me as making a decision to take a definite course of action.

10a. In the case of the well prepared student there is rarely if ever such a thing as an unfair test.
  b. Many times exam questions tend to be so unrelated to course work that studying is really useless.

11a. Becoming a success is a matter of hard work, luck has little or nothing to do with it.
b. Getting a good job depends mainly on being in the right place at the right time.

12a. The average citizen can have an influence in government decision.
b. This world is run by the few people in power, and there is not much the little guy can do about it.

13a. When I make plans, I am almost certain that I can make them work.
b. It is not always wise to plan too far ahead because many things turn out to be a matter of good or bad fortune anyhow.

14a. There are certain people who are just no good.
b. There is some good in everybody.

15a. In my case getting what I want has little or nothing to do with luck.
b. Many times we might just as well decide what to do by flipping a coin.

16a. Who gets to be the boss often depends on who was lucky enought to be in the right place first.
b. Getting people to do the right thing depends upon ability, luck has little or nothing to do with it.

17a. As fare as world affairs are concerned, most of us are the victims of forces we can neither understand, nor control.
b. By taking an active part in political and social affairs the people can control world events.

18a. Most people don't realize the extent to which their lives are controlled by accidental happenings.
b. There really is no such thing as "luck."

19a. One should always be willing to admit mistakes.
b. It is usually best to cover up one's mistakes.

20a. It is hard to know whether or not a person really likes you.
b. How many friends you have depends on how nice a person you are.

21a. In the long run the bad things that happen to us are balanced by the good ones.
b. Most misfortunes are the result of lack of ability, ignorance, laziness, or all three.

22a. With enough effort we can wipe out political corruption.
b. It is difficult for people to have much control over the things politicians do in office.

23a. Sometimes I can't understand how teachers arrive at the grades they give.
b. There is a direct connection between how hard I study and the grades I get.

24a. Many times I feel that I have little influence over the things that happen to me.
  b. It is impossible for me to believe that chance or luck plays in important role in my life.

25a. People are lonely because they don't try to be friendly.
  b. There's not much use in trying too hard to please people, if they like you, they like you.

26a. There is too much emphasis on athletics in high school.
  b. Team sports are an excellent way to build character.

27a. What happens to me is my own doing.
  b. Sometimes I feel that I don't have enought control over the direction my life is taking.

28a. Most of the time I can't understand why politicians behave the way they do.
  b. In the long run the people are responsible for bad government on a national as well as on a local level.

Schedule IV

The purpose of this questionnaire is to find out the kind and amount of violence you experienced in your relationship to the person who battered you. Here is a list of things your husband/boyfriend may have done during the last six months that you lived with him.

Please circle a number for each of the things listed below to indicate how often he did it in the last six months.

	Never	Once	Twice	3-5 Times	6-10 Times	11-20 Times	More Than 20 Times	Don't Know
1. Discussed issues calmly.	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
2. Got information to back up his side of things.	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
3. Brought in or tried to bring in someone to help settle things.	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
4. Insulted or swore at you.	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
5. Sulked and/or refused to talk about it.	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
6. Stomped out of the room or house (or yard).	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
7. Cried	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
8. Did or said something to spite you.	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
9. Threatened to hit or throw something at you.	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
10. Threw or smashed or hit or kicked something.	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
11. Threw something at you.	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
12. Pushed, grabbed or shoved you.	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
13. Slapped you.	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
14. Kicked, bit, or hit with a fist.	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
15. Hit or tried to hit with something.	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
16. Beat you up.	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X

	Never	Once	Twice	3-5 Times	6-10 Times	11-20 Times	More Than 20 Times	Don't Know
17. Threatened with a knife or gun.	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
18. Used a knife or gun.	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X
19. Other ____ ____________________	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	X

CONFIDENTIAL

DISCOVERY HOUSE RESEARCH

INTERVIEW SCHEDULE FOR STAFF MEMBERS

ID # ____________________ Date ________________

Sex _______________ Occupation ____________________

Age ________

Length of Time at Discovery House ___________________________

1. How did you first become involved in Discovery House?

   Probes: friend, community organization, volunteer bureau, you were asked, church, etc.

2. Would you please describe your job as a staff member?

   Probes: are you involved in policy making, decision making, any committees (role here), special staff positions

3. Would you please describe what the main task of the staff is from your perspective?

   Probes: to run Discovery House, to raise money, to oversee staff and programs, to do community education, etc.

4. What do you think are the causes of wife battering?

   Probes: some women deserve it, traditional roles, predominance of violence, alcohol

5. What do you think are the solutions to wife battering?

   Probes: more shelters, change in traditional roles, more feminist groups, therapy for man, etc.

6. What are the criteria for admission to Discovery House?

   Probes: don't give them any

7. What do you see as the most important needs of the women of Discovery House?

   Probes: time, security, instrumental help, support, are these being met, not met

8. What do you see as the most important needs of the children?

   Probes: security, positive environment, etc.

9. How do you think policy is made at Discovery House?

   Probes: who, where, when, types of policies, results, give examples

10. How are day-to-day decisions made at Discovery House?

    Probes: who, where, when, kinds of decisions, give examples

11. What is your view of the programs being offered by Discovery House?

    Probes: name programs, their goals, strengths and weaknesses, changes you would make

12. Do you believe that attendance at programs should be mandatory for the women?

    Probes: they are now, some don't like it

13. Have there been any program changes at all during your association with Discovery House?

    Probes: which ones, who changed them, how were they changed

14. What are the procedures at Discovery House used to protect confidentiality?

    Probes: security of files, etc.

15. What do you think about the overall physical characteristics of Discovery House?

    Probes: community location, separate suites, evaluation of amenities, play areas, degree of privacy, security system, working conditions, telephoning

16. How do you think the community view Discovery House?

    Probes: agencies, media, positively/negatively, role in community

17. What are the greatest challenges facing Discovery House right now?

    Probes: funding, staffing, physical environment, government policy, etc.

18. What do you see as the future for Discovery House?

    Probes: size, type of service, funding networking with other agencies, etc.

19. Could you please describe a typical staff meeting?

    Probes: please probe for conflicts and how they are resolved

20. If you could change several things at Discovery House, what would you change?

    Probes: nothing is perfect - rules, programs, staff

21. What do you think have been the greatest benefits for you as a staff member and your own worst problems?

    Probes: none

22. Do you feel that your contributions are always recognized?

    Probes: if yes how, if no why

CONFIDENTIAL

DISCOVERY HOUSE RESEARCH

INTERVIEW SCHEDULE FOR BOARD MEMBERS

ID # ____________________ Date ________________

Sex _______________ Occupation ____________________

Age ________

Length of Time at Discovery House ____________________________

1. How did you first become involved in Discovery House?

   Probes: friend, community organization, volunteer bureau, you were asked, church, etc.

2. Would you please describe your job as a board member?

   Probes: are you involved in policy making, decision making, any committees (role here), special board positions

3. Would you please describe what the main task of the board is from your perspective?

   Probes: to run Discovery House, to raise money, to oversee staff and programs, to do community education, etc.

4. What do you think are the causes of wife battering?

   Probes: some women deserve it, traditional roles, predominance of violence, alcohol

5. What do you think are the solutions to wife battering?

   Probes: more shelters, change in traditional roles, more feminist groups, therapy for man, etc.

6. What are the criteria for admission to Discovery House?

   Probes: don't give them any

7. What do you see as the most important needs of the women of Discovery House?

   Probes: time, security, instrumental help, support, are these being met, not met

8. What do you see as the most important needs of the children?

   Probes: security, positive environment, etc.

9. How do you think policy is made at Discovery House?

   Probes: who, where, when, types of policies, results, give examples

10. How are day-to-day decisions made at Discovery House?

    Probes: who, where, when, kinds of decisions, give examples

11. What is your view of the programs being offered by Discovery House?

    Probes: name programs, their goals, strengths and weaknesses, changes you would make

12. Do you believe that attendance at programs should be mandatory for the women?

    Probes: they are now, some don't like it

13. Have there been any program changes at all during your association with Discovery House?

    Probes: which ones, who changed them, how were they changed

14. What are the procedures at Discovery House used to protect confidentiality?

    Probes: security of files, etc.

15. What do you think about the overall physical characteristics of Discovery House?

    Probes: community location, separate suites, evaluation of amenities, play areas, degree of privacy, security system, working conditions, telephoning

16. How do you think the community view Discovery House?

    Probes: agencies, media, positively/negatively, role in community

17. What are the greatest challenges facing Discovery House right now?

    Probes: funding, staffing, physical environment, government policy, etc.

18. What do you see as the future for Discovery House?

    Probes: size, type of service, funding networking with other agencies, etc.

19. Could you please describe a typical board meeting?

    Probes: please probe for conflicts and how they are resolved

20. If you could change several things at Discovery House, what would you change?

    Probes: nothing is perfect - rules, programs, staff

21. What do you think have been the greatest benefits for you as a board member and your own worst problems?

    Probes: none

22. Do you feel that your contributions are always recognized?

    Probes: if yes how, if no why

CONFIDENTIAL

DISCOVERY HOUSE RESEARCH

INTERVIEW SCHEDULE FOR VOLUNTEERS

ID # ________________ Date ________________

Sex ______________ Occupation ________________

Age ________

Length of Time at Discovery House ____________________

1. How did you first become involved in Discovery House?

   Probes: friend, community organization, volunteer bureau, you were asked, church, etc.

2. Would you please describe your job as a volunteer?

   Probes: are you involved in policy making, decision making, any committees (role here), special volunteer positions

3. Would you please describe what the main task of volunteers is from your perspective?

   Probes: to run Discovery House, to raise money, to oversee staff and programs, to do community education, etc.

4. What do you think are the causes of wife battering?

   Probes: some women deserve it, traditional roles, predominance of violence, alcohol

5. What do you think are the solutions to wife battering?

   Probes: more shelters, change in traditional roles, more feminist groups, therapy for man, etc.

6. What are the criteria for admission to Discovery House?

   Probes: don't give them any

7. What do you see as the most important needs of the women of Discovery House?

   Probes: time, security, instrumental help, support, are these being met, not met

8. What do you see as the most important needs of the children?

   Probes: security, positive environment, etc.

9. How do you think policy is made at Discovery House?

   Probes: who, where, when, types of policies, results, give examples

10. How are day-to-day decisions made at Discovery House?

    Probes: who, where, when, kinds of decisions, give examples

11. What is your view of the programs being offered by Discovery House?

    Probes: name programs, their goals, strengths and weaknesses, changes you would make

12. Do you believe that attendance at programs should be mandatory for the women?

    Probes: they are now, some don't like it

13. Have there been any program changes at all during your association with Discovery House?

    Probes: which ones, who changed them, how were they changed

14. What are the procedures at Discovery House used to protect confidentiality?

    Probes: security of files, etc.

15. What do you think about the overall physical characteristics of Discovery House?

    Probes: community location, separate suites, evaluation of amenities, play areas, degree of privacy, security system, working conditions, telephoning

16. How do you think the community view Discovery House?

Probes: agencies, media, positively/negatively, role in community

17. What are the greatest challenges facing Discovery House right now?

Probes: funding, staffing, physical environment, government policy, etc.

18. What do you see as the future for Discovery House?

Probes: size, type of service, funding networking with other agencies, etc.

19. Could you please describe a typical volunteer meeting?

Probes: please probe for conflicts and how they are resolved

20. If you could change several things at Discovery House, what would you change?

Probes: nothing is perfect - rules, programs, staff

21. What do you think have been the greatest benefits for you as a volunteer and your own worst problems?

Probes: none

22. Do you feel that your contributions are always recognized?

Probes: if yes how, if no why

QUESTIONNAIRE TO DOCUMENT THE RELATIONSHIP OF COMMUNITY AGENCIES AND ORGANIZATIONS TO DISCOVERY HOUSE

Name of Agency/Organization: ______________________

Date Questionnaire was completed: ______________________

1. Please describe your contact with Discovery House using the following headings as a guide:

   A. How often have you had contact with Discovery House (approximately)?

   B. What has been the nature of the contact?

   C. Who initiated the contact?

   D. Please provide below any comments you wish to offer regarding your contact with Discovery House:

/.....

2. What services, programs, or other assistance can you or your agency/organization provide to Discovery House residents?

3.A. Does your organization/agency have a mandate, objectives and/or policies related to wife assault or battered women? YES__________ NO__________

B. If so, please provide below a brief outline of them:

C. Please provide below any comments you wish to offer on your organization's/agency's mandate, objectives, or policies:

4.A. What are your suggestions for improving your own services or assistance to battered women?

/....

B. What are your suggestions for improving the services provided by Discovery House?

5. Please provide below any additional comments you wish to make:

Collateral Agencies

Advice, Information and Direction Centre

Alberta Social Services and Community Health

Burns Foundation

Calgary General Hospital

Calgary Health Service

Calgary Home and Domestics

Calgary Police

Calgary Women's Emergency Shelter

Cambyr Agency

Canadian Mental Health

Central Alberta Women's Emergency Shelter

City Social Services

Ex. Sheriff-King Women's Emergency Shelter

Family Life Education Council

Holy Cross Hospital

Interval House

Legal Firms (3)

Medicine Hat Women's Shelter

Odyssey House

Pastoral Institute

Strathcona Shelter Society

Unity House

Whitecourt Shelter

APPENDIX III

Table A1: Varimax Rotated Factor Matrices, for the Social Independence Scale over the Three Study Intervals

Table A2: Unrotated Factor Matrices, for the Fear Scale over the Three Study Intervals

Table A3: Varimax Rotated Factor Matrices, for Rotter's I-E Locus of Control Scale over the Three Study Intervals

Table A4: Unrotated Factor Matrices for the Conflict Tactics Scale over the Three Study Intervals

Table A5: Social Independence Scale Items

Table A6: Fear Scale Items

Table A7: Conflict Tactics Scale Items

Table A8: Rotter's I-E Locus of Control Scale Items

Table A9: Split-Half and Standardized Item Alpha Coefficients for the Cross-Sectional (N=63) and Panel (N=30) Samples

Table A10: T-Test for the Difference Between the Scale Means by Study Interval and Sample Design

Table A11: Test-Retest Reliability as Indicated by the Pearson's Correlation Coefficients Broken Down by Study Interval and Sample Design

APPENDIX III:

FACTOR ANALYSIS AND TESTS OF RELIABILITY

Introduction

As noted in Chapter II, four sets of measurement instruments were used in this study. The instruments employed were: the conflict tactics scale (Straus, 1979), Rotter's (1966) internal-external locus of control scale, the fear scale and a scale of social independence. While a detailed discussion of the reasons for their employment and the intent and purpose of each of the instruments has already been presented elsewhere, this discussion will concern itself with the methods, procedures and results of the analysis of each of the above noted scales. In addition, two sampling designs were employed in this study; a cross-sectional design and a panel design. Although the following discussion focuses primarily upon the results of the analysis conducted on the cross-sectional sample, a brief discussion of the results from the analysis of the panel sample is presented at the end of this section. All tables appear at the end of the appendix.

Statistical Techniques

The ensuing presentation of the findings for the four sets of measurement instruments used in the study were produced via the application of three distinct types of statistical procedures. Specifically, the three types of statistical techniques employed here include: factor analysis, Chronbach's split-half reliability and Student's t-test for the difference between the sample means at times one through three (i.e., admission, termination and follow-up).

Factor Analysis

Primarily employed as a method of data reduction, factor analysis is a statistical technique which is designed to identify and illuminate the underlying dimensionality of a data set. That is, its primary function is the elucidation and examination of the interrelationships amongst a set of items (variables) with the intent of defining which items seem to cluster or group together. More specifically, factor analysis refers to "a variety of statistical techniques whose common objective is to represent a set of variables in terms of a smaller number of hypothetical variables (Kim & Mueller, 1978:9). Thus, the ultimate intent of subjecting a data set to this type of analysis is to develop a concise and succinct set of items which represent the phenomena which are outlined for study at a higher level of precision while at the same time maintaining the integrity of the original set of scale items.

Two types of factor analysis were employed in the data analysis: principal-component analysis and classical or common factor analysis. The reasons for employing the two types will be presented in conjunction with the presentation of the methodological considerations involved in analyzing the separate scales. The type of factor analysis employed was dependent upon the nature of the data collected and the assumptions which we were willing and were able to make about the four sets of data. These specific issues will be addressed in the methodological considerations section of this appendix.

Principal-component analysis is a form of factor analysis which transforms a set of items into a composite set of variables or principal-components which are uncorrelated to each other. At its simplest level, principal-components analysis assumes that the factors which are uncorrelated or orthognal to one another. Hence, the principal-components model assumes no error. Thus, the first factor (principal component) represents the largest amount of variance in the data, the second explains the second largest amount of variance and so on and so forth. Essentially then, the principal-component model can be expressed as follows:

$$Z_j = a_{j1} F_1 + a_{j2} F_2 + \ldots + a_{jn} F_n$$

where "...each of the n observed variables is described linearly in terms of n new uncorrelated components F_1, $F_2 \ldots F_n$, each of which is in turn defined as a linear combination of the n original variables" (Kim, 1979:471). As such then, each factor extracted exists as the best linear summary of "the variance left in the data set after the previous components are taken care of" (Kim, 1979:471).

Classical or common factor analysis, on the other hand, assumes that each factor extracted may be broken down into two distinct components: a common component and a unique component. Thus, the common-factor analytic model may be expressed as such:

$$"Z_j = a_{j1} F_1 + a_{j2} F_2 + \ldots + a_{jm} F_m + d_j U_j \qquad j = 1,2\ldots n$$

where Z_j = variable j in standardized form
F_i = hypothetic factors
U_j = unique factor for variable j
a_{ji} = standardized multiple-regression coefficient of variable j on factor i (factor loading)
d_j = standardized regression coefficient of variable j on unique factor j." (Kim, 1979:471)

In addition, the unique factor is assumed to be uncorrelated to all the other factors and their concomitant unique factors. That is, the errors are assumed to be uncorrelated and normally distributed (i.e., the assumption of homoscedasticity; see Pedhazur, 1983). Therefore, as Kim (1979) has suggested, "if there is any correlation between the two variables j and n, it is assumed to be due to the common factors" (Kim, 1979:471).

Finally, whether factors are defined or inferred, the underlying structure or dimensionality of a data set may not be unique. That is, one factor solution can be transformed into another without violating the basic mathematical properties constituting a given solution (see Kim & Mueller, 1978a; 1978b; Kim, 1979).[1] In order to compensate for this indeterminancy, a varimax rotational procedure is employed to achieve simple structure within each individual data set. Varimax rotation is an orthognal rotational method which simplifies the dimensionality (factor structure) of a data set by maximizing the variance explained on a column of the pattern matrix (Kim & Mueller, 1978:79). That is, varimax rotation rotates the factors in such a way that each of the items in the data set load on the first factor, thereby, maximizing the variance explained by that factor.

Tests of Reliability

As previously noted, both Chronbach's Split-half reliability and the standardized alpha reliability were calculated for each of the scales in order to assess the degree to which the items selected for inclusion in the scales go together. Essentially the split-half technique involves splitting the data set into two equal parts which are then compared as to the extent to which they are equivalent (Bostwick & Kyte, 1985:177). Often referred to as the "parallel model," it is done so because each half is treated as the equivalent form of the other half measured at a different point in time.[2] If the estimates of the scores in each half are equivalent, it is assumed that the scale is not appreciably affected by measurement errors and therefore assumed to be reliable.

---

[1] Both the discussion of the principal-components and classical factor analytic models rely heavily upon Kim's discussion of factor analysis as presented in SPSS User's Manual, 1979:468-482.

Two further points about the tests of reliability must be noted. First, the split-half reliability (Chronbach's alpha) is equivalent to the Kuder-Richardson reliability coefficient when the data are dichotomous in nature. Secondly, the standardized item alpha (see: SPSS User's Manual, 1981:256) is presented for each of the scales. The standardized item alpha provides a more conservative estimate of the reliability of a set of items in a scale. Essentially, the standardized item alpha is generated using the same procedures as Chronbach's alpha and the Kuder-Richardson reliability coefficients, except that each item included in a scale is standardized by dividing it by its' standard deviation (SPSS User's Manual, 1981:250).

Finally, estimates of test-retest reliability were produced. One way to estimate reliability is by assessing a set of scale items stability through time. Given the research design of the present study, it allowed for the estimation of summary scores at three points in time (admission, termination, and follow-up). Hence, the test-retest reliability for each of the four measurements instruments was generated by estimating the Pearson's correlation coefficient of determination for each set of summary scales at each point in time. The stability of each set of scales was then assessed by examining the extent to which the summary scores of each scale are constant over time (Bostwick & Kyte, 1985:171).

---

[2] It should be noted that in two of the four sets of scale items, simple structure was achieved without having to rotate the factors to a terminal solution. The two scales are: The Fear Scale and the Conflict Tactics Scale.

Student's T-test: A Comparison of Sample Means

A Student's t-test for the difference between each of the scale sample means was computed for the three study intervals for each of the scales. The Student's t-test, based on Student's t-distribution, is a method for calculating tests of statistical significance for sample sizes of less than thirty. This procedure was conducted in order to assess whether or not any actual changes occurred in the scale means from time one to time two, time two to time three, and from time one to time three. Thus, if the difference between the scales means at each interval is statistically significant, we can say that they are due to a treatment effect as opposed to chance.

Methodological Considerations

Briefly, a number of methodological considerations must first be noted before we can present the findings from the analysis of data on the scale items. In particular three issues must be addressed.

First, in reference to the social independence scale, it was found that the unequal distribution of the original coding of the items in this scale served to introduce non-random error into the factor analysis (i.e., violating the assumption of homoscedasticity). Hence, in order to correct for this difficulty, the scale items were recoded into dichotomous sets of categories; coded 0 for dependence and 1 for independence. However, this solution presented a further problem in terms of one of the basic assumptions of factor analysis.

The second methodological consideration is concerned with the issue of dichotomous-categorically defined data. As Kim & Mueller (1978:74-75) suggest, this type of data present a special problem in the use of factor analysis. They have noted that one cannot express dichotomous variables within the factor analytic model. More specifically, the factor analytic model assumes a normal distribution of continuous values and therefore normally distributed random error. While it is clear that this assumption is inconsistent with dichotomous variables, Kim and Mueller (1978b) suggest this problem may be compensated for through the use of principal-components analysis which transforms a given set of items into a new set of composite variables or principal-components which are uncorrelated with one another. That is, it does not make any particular assumptions about the underlying structure of the variables in the data but seeks only to uncover the patterns of association or clustering of the items included in the analysis. In other words, no assumptions are made about the error structure in principal-components analysis, therefore allowing for the analysis of dichotomous data; in this particular study, for the analysis of the social independence and Rotter's scales.

Finally, the last issue to be addressed is that of sample size. As previously noted, two samples were delineated within the data collected for this study. First, in terms of the cross-sectional panel design, the overall sample size was 63, however, given non-response to certain items in each of the scales it reduced the sample size to anywhere from 54 to 59 at admission (t_1). In addition, given the attrition rates noted in Chapter II, the sample size was reduced even more dramatically at t_2 and t_3 (termination and follow-up). While the reduction in sample size does not present a problem in terms of the calculation of the reliability coefficients and the t-tests, it does in terms of the factor analysis. Introducing non-random error into the calculation of the zero-order correlation matrix, upon which the factor analysis is based, the reduction in sample size posed somewhat of a problem. However, this problem was addressed and resolved by substituting the missing cases for each score item with the mean score of the available cases on those items. While this procedure has a tendency to inflate the zero-order correlations, and hence the factor loadings and their concomitant error terms, we felt that it was acceptable given that we were mainly concerned with the overall structuring/ clustering of the variables within their respective scales.

In terms of the panel sample design (N=30), it was found that even with mean substitution, there were still too few cases to legitimately employ a factor analytic procedure. However, t-tests and the tests of reliability were conducted for the panel data and it was found that they were highly consistent with the cross-sectional design.

Procedures

The data for each set of scale items were subjected to an initial factor analysis in order to determine the general underlying dimensionality of each of the scales. Given the information generated from this initial run, each respective scale was reduced on the basis of three criteria. First, items were eliminated from the consequent factor analysis if, even after mean substitution, there were still too few cases to produce reliable zero-order correlation coefficients for that item. The second criteria for exclusion was oriented to items which exhibited little or no variance. Hence, those items in which 90 percent or more of the cases fell into one category were excluded as well. Finally, items were eliminated from further analysis on the basis of whether they were "good" or "bad"; that is, on whether they fit into the overall structure of each scale. This was determined on the basis of an item's factor loading. Thus, any item with a factor loading of .3 (the rule of thumb loading minimum for inclusion) or less were excluded from any further analysis of the data for each scale.

Finally, while all of the scales at each study interval were examined, the choice to exclude or include a particular item from any subsequent analysis was based primarily upon the initial analysis of the admission scales. The reasoning behind this is based on the previously noted problem of sample size. The admission scales had only two missing cases, therefore, it was estimated that the results from the factor analysis of these scales would be the most consistent and reliable. Hence, the results from the factor analysis for the scales at admission were adhered to as the "ideal type" for the subsequent analysis at time 2 and time 3 (termination and follow-up). In addition, this choice was further substantiated by the decision to keep the scales as similar as possible in order to ensure comparability through time. As will be demonstrated, these decisions manifested themselves in terms of factoral complexity observed in the results (i.e., multiple loadings and reverse signs) involved in the models developed at time 2 and time 3.

The Findings

The findings for each of the measurement instruments in this study will be presented separately in the following pages. In addition to the results of the factor analysis, the results of the split-half reliability tests will also be presented in conjunction with their corresponding test-retest reliabilities.

A. The Scale of Social Independence

Commencing with 18 categorically coded items, the original scale was reduced to 9 items according to the previously noted criteria. The items selected for inclusion in the final analysis are presented in Table A5.

Table A1 presents the results from the final factor analysis conducted on the items remaining in the scale. The final results were rotated to a terminal solution using a varimax rotational procedure. As indicated in Table A1, simple structure was achieved with the exception of items 6 and 7, which proved to be problematic across all three study intervals. Despite this, four factors seem to emerge from the data. However, no one factor seems to dominate the solution with all having similar eigen values, communalities and with each factor explaining between 12 and 17 percent of variance in the scale. Overall, the 4 factors together explain approximately 61 percent of the variance. While these items do seem to cluster together in terms of expressing various facets of an individual's social independence, there does appear to be a problem in terms of how the items group together with respect to their face validity. This, coupled with extremely low test-retest reliability, (Table A11), split-half and standardized item alpha reliability (Table A9), suggests that in fact the items do not seem to scale very well together. This observation is further substantiated by the deterioration of the simple structure solution exhibited at time 1 as we move across study intervals. Despite these difficulties, the items do seem to represent a very general dimension of social independence. While the items themselves do not appear to scale very well together, it is suggested that the scale not be abandoned altogether. Rather, further refinement and testing with a larger sample is indicated.

B. Fear Scale

Initially consisting of 24 likert-type items, the fear scale was slimmed down to 17 items using the previously outlined procedure. The final set of items derived for inclusion in the scale are presented in Table A6.

As Table A2 indicates, simple structure was achieved without rotating to a terminal solution. Indeed, upon initial examination of the unrotated factor solution, it was found that the items generally tended to scale together, explaining 37 percent of the variance in the data set. While some factor complexity is observed, as demonstrated by the presence of two additional factors, examination of the plotted factors indicates that, in fact, a single factor or cluster is present. Furthermore, this observation is reinforced by the large eigen values produced for the first factor as compared to other two factors. These observations are further supported by the test-retest, split-half and standardized item alpha reliabilities. Indeed, the fear scale has a reported standardized item alpha ranging from .89 to .92 over the three study intervals. In terms of test-retest reliability associated with this scale, it would appear that the fear scale displays a high degree of consistency over time (Table A11). Although there appears to be some fluctuation in terms of the reported Pearson correlation coefficient between the admission and follow-up scales, this difference is not significant and therefore can be attributed to random sampling and measurement error. While it can be suggested that some of the more complex items, which load on 2 or 3 factors and which have negative loadings, be eliminated from the scale, it is recommended that the scale be kept intact for further testing and refinement.

C. Rotter's I-E Locus of Control

Originally starting out with 28 dichotomously coded items, the Rotter's Scale was subsequently reduced to the 13 items as seen in Table A8.

Table A3 consists of the final factor analysis conducted for this scale. Simple structure was achieved after rotating the items to a terminal solution using a varimax rotational procedure. As indicated in the table, simple structure was achieved with the exception of items 3, 6, 11 and 13 which load on one or more factors. Therefore, it is suggested that perhaps these items could be deleted from the scale in future analyses.

The rotated factor matrices suggests that there are 3 dominant underlying dimensions in the scale. That is, while the items do cluster together to represent the single concept of control, this scale can be further broken down into 3 sub-dimensions or aspects of control.

The first factor, consisting of items 1, 2, and 3 accounts for approximately 25 percent of the variance. This factor has to with one's belief that outside forces control one's life. Factors 2 and 3 explain 13 and 11 percent of the variance in the scale respectively. Factor 2 is made up of items 4, 5, 6, which have to do with an individual's personal control over their life; with the items referring to aspects or events in the individuals personal life. Factor 3 consists of items 7, 8, and 9 and generally has to do with one's control over their interactions/ interpersonal relations with others. Finally, two other minor/ secondary factors emerge from the data. However, they tend to consist of items which either load on more than one factor or which carry with them a negative sign. It is therefore suggested that these items might be eliminated from future analyses.

In general, previous research has indicated that Rotter's I-E Locus of Control Scale has an internal consistency coefficient (Kuder-Richardson) of .70. The split-half alpha and the standardized item alpha[3] presented in Table A9 are consistent with these findings at admission (.71) and termination (.75) with a slight decline in the magnitude of the coefficients for the follow-up scales (.62). It is suggested that one possible explanation for the drop in the coefficient is the small number of cases available for analysis at time 3 (see previous discussion on methodological considerations).

In terms of the sample test-retest reliability coefficients which have been previously recorded (Rotter, 1966), r's ranging from .61 (maximum) at time 1 to .49 at time 2 have been observed. Pearson's correlation coefficients were calculated for the present study for the correlations between time 1 and time 2, and time 2 and time 3, and overall from time 1 to time 3. The findings from Table A11 suggest that they are consistent with previous findings. The correlation between t_1 and t_2 is .74 and consequently dropped to .65 when the scale was administered again 6 months later. In general then it can be suggested that the items selected for inclusion seem to scale extremely well together. However, given the observed factor complexity and the deterioration in the factor structure through time it is suggested that this modified scale be subjected to further testing.

---

[3] The split-half and standardized item alpha are equivalent to the Kuder-Richardson internal consistency coefficient when the data are dichotomous or categorical (SPSS User's Manual, 1984:256).

D. Conflict Tactics Scale (CTS)

Starting with 20 items in the original scale, the CTS was consequently slimmed down to 12 items. The final set of items selected for inclusion in the scale are presented in Table A7.

Table A4 consists of the final factor solution obtained for this scale. A terminal factor solution was achieved without rotation. Overall, two dominant factors emerge from the data as opposed to the three dimensions uncovered by Straus (1979). In general, Straus (1979) suggests that 3 dimensions emerged from his scale of 20 items: reasoning, verbal aggression and violence. In terms of the modified scale presented here, 2 dimensions seem to emerge. The most dominant factor, which explains 38 percent (eigen value = 4.5) of variance in the scale, which increases through time, consists of items which centre around Straus' concept of violence. The second dimension consists of a composite of Straus' reasoning and verbal aggression dimensions. This factor explains 18 percent of the variance in the scale. Overall, however, it would seem the scale might be best used in terms of assessing the actual amount of violence within families characterized by abusive relationships.

In terms of the overall reliability of the scale, Straus reports an item-total correlation between the three factors ranging from .70 to

.88. In reference to the present study, the overall standardized item alpha was .82, .89 and .93 for the scale at admission, termination and follow-up respectively. In addition, these findings are also supported by the test-retest reliabilities which are significant at the .01 level across all three study intervals. The overall correlation (r) from time 1 to time 3 is .80 while the correlation (r) between the admission and termination and the termination and follow-up scales is .62 and .51 respectively. Thus, it can be suggested that items selected for inclusion in the modified CTS do seem to scale well together. In addition, on the basis of its face validity, split-half reliability and the test-retest reliability, in conjunction with the factor analysis, it would seem the violence dimension is the dominant factor in assessing the "...modes of managing and resolving the conflicts which are inherent in the family" (Straus, 1979:85), and for the battered women examined here.

The Panel Design

As suggested in Chapter II, a panel sample was selected from the overall data set which consisted of 30 women who had completed all phases of the project (interviews, questionnaire, and scales). In terms of the factor analysis, it was found that even using the mean substitution procedure described previously to compensate for missing cases on individual items for each scale did not produce enough cases for the successful application of the factor analytic procedure to the panel sample. However, in order to compare the results from the cross-sectional sample to the panel sample, both the split-half and test-retest reliabilities were applied to the panel data. Basically then, the procedure was such that the same items chosen for selection in the scales for the cross-sectional sample were chosen for analysis in terms of the calculations of the reliabilities of the scales for the panel sample.

The logic behind this decision was that superficial comparisons could be made across the samples. If the results from the reliability tests for the panel sample were consistent with those obtained from the cross-sectional sample, it could be argued that, in fact, the scales were indeed measuring what they were meant to measure.

The findings from the tests of reliability conducted on the scale items from the panel sample indicate a high degree of consistency and comparability with the cross-sectional design. In terms of the overall split-half and standardized item alpha reliability, it is observed (see lower half of Table A9) that, for the panel design, the alpha coefficients are consistently larger than the one's reported for the cross-sectional design. The exceptions are the alpha's reported for the social independence scale suggesting some inconsistency in the data for this scale. However, on the whole the data from the panel sample seem to support and reinforce the results obtained from the data for the cross-sectional sample. In addition, the findings of the test-retest reliabilities run on the scales for the panel sample indicate virtually identical test-retest coefficients and reliabilities as those obtained from the cross-sectional sample. Thus, the conclusions from these findings suggest that, for the most part, the measurement instruments used in this study are measuring what they were intended to measure. However, in the case of the social independence and fear scales, further testing as to their validity and reliability over time is indicated. Furthermore, given the results for the two standardized scales used in this study, the CTS and Rotter's I-E scale, and their subsequent modifications, it also suggested that further testing be done as to their stability over time as well.

TABLE A1: VARIMAX ROTATED FACTOR MATRICES, FOR THE SOCIAL INDEPENDENCE SCALE OVER THE THREE STUDY INTERVALS

TIME 1: ADMISSION SCALES

Items Included	Factor 1	Factor 2	Factor 3	Factor 4	h2
Item 1 (N=55)	.79279				.6614
Item 2 (N=55)	-.67407				.5138
Item 3 (N=55)		.82534			.7038
Item 4 (N=55)		-.77633			.6423
Item 5 (N=55)			.75190		.5832
Item 6 (N=55)	.54216		.59668		.6649
Item 7 (N=55)			-.56917	.47112	.5836
Item 8 (N=55)				-.78762	.6401
Item 9 (N=55)				.61408	.4849
Eigen Values	1.5606	1.4939	1.3607	1.0630	
Percentage of Variance Explained	17.3	16.6	15.1	11.8	60.9%

TIME 2: TERMINATION SCALES

Items Included	Factor 1	Factor 2	Factor 3	Factor 4	h2
Item 1 (N=55)		.82514			.7162
Item 2 (N=55)	.75400				.6493
Item 3 (N=55)	.37525		.38973		.3154
Item 4 (N=55)	-.73620				.5959
Item 5 (N=55)	.40651		-.60072	.45038	.7368
Item 6 (N=55)				.81625	.7641
Item 7 (N=55)	-.35543	.78717	-.35149	-.60587	.6705
Item 8 (N=55)					.6715
Item 9 (N=55)			.81545		.7237
Eigen Values	2.0177	1.3867	1.3019	1.1371	
Percentage of Variance Explained	22.4	15.4	14.5	12.6	64.9%

TIME 3: FOLLOW-UP SCALES

Items Included	Factor 1	Factor 2	Factor 3	Factor 4	h2
Item 1 (N=55)	.67852				.5734
Item 2 (N=55)		.60309		.69767	.8678
Item 3 (N=55)		.79105			.7733
Item 4 (N=55)	.79661				.7034
Item 5 (N=55)				.84064	.7704
Item 6 (N=55)	.45938	-.36824	.46254	.42041	.7373
Item 7 (N=55)	.68352				.4776
Item 8 (N=55)	.35079	.67441	-.39304		.7359
Item 9 (N=55)			.91648		.8429
Eigen Values	2.0605	1.7737	1.5504	1.0974	
Percentage of Variance Explained	22.9	19.7	17.2	12.2	72.0%

TABLE A2: UNROTATED FACTOR MATRICES, FOR THE FEAR SCALE OVER THE THREE STUDY INTERVALS

TIME 1: ADMISSION SCALES

Items Included	Factor 1	Factor 2	Factor 3	h2
Item 1 (N=59)	.72655			.672
Item 2 (N=59)	.69575			.648
Item 3 (N=59)	.67960			.556
Item 4 (N=59)	.67154			.652
Item 5 (N=59)	.64731			.627
Item 6 (N=59)	.64064			.583
Item 7 (N=59)	.63347	-.42100		.562
Item 8 (N=59)	.62733			.602
Item 9 (N=59)	.61173			.595
Item 10 (N=59)	.60504		.32268	.518
Item 11 (N=59)	.58812	.39958		.544
Item 12 (N=59)	.51561	.32788		.481
Item 13 (N=59)	.47175	-.44932		.472
Item 14 (N=59)	.43815	.42365	.35298	.477
Item 15 (N=59)	.42916			.335
Item 16 (N=59)	.40335	.31789		.300
Item 17 (N=59)	.39214		-.46665	.322
Eigen Values	6.3327	1.8217	1.2707	
Percentage of Variance Explained	37.3	10.7	7.5	55.4%

TIME 2: TERMINATION SCALES

Items Included	Factor 1	Factor 2	Factor 3	Factor 4	Factor 5	Factor 6	h2
Item 1 (N=38)	.75065						.721
Item 2 (N=38)	.74597						.702
Item 3 (N=38)	.57630	-.31989	.34117			.46500	.602
Item 4 (N=37)	.78228						.720
Item 5 (N=38)	.69130	.46304					.751
Item 6 (N=37)	.61402						.522
Item 7 (N=39)	.30616	.53933	.37483		.60209		.549
Item 8 (N=38)	.59706		.30042				.622
Item 9 (N=38)	.33561		-.38674				.532
Item 10 (N=38)	.49188	.46940				.31362	.572
Item 11 (N=38)	.50467			-.56678			.547
Item 12 (N=38)	.50580						.575
Item 13 (N=39)	.42144		-.63612				.546
Item 14 (N=38)	.38769		.40155				.448
Item 15 (N=38)	.33463	.48622			-.43489		.580
Item 16 (N=38)	.67931	-.47504		.32440			.769
Item 17 (N=38)		-.48469		.30974			.515
Eigen Values	5.5441	2.2253	1.7872	1.2556	.9936	.9249	
Percentage of Variance Explained	32.6	13.1	10.5	7.4	5.8	5.4	74.9%

TIME 3: FOLLOW-UP SCALES

Items Included	Factor 1	Factor 2	Factor 3	Factor 4	Factor 5	h2
Item 1 (N=26)	.89973					.896
Item 2 (N=26)	.84415					.886
Item 3 (N=26)	.79141	-.30535			-.36668	.868
Item 4 (N=26)	.68208	.44221		.32355		.814
Item 5 (N=26)	.62607					.784
Item 6 (N=26)	.54364					.719
Item 7 (N=26)	.51843	.33771				.779
Item 8 (N=25)	.74757					.814
Item 9 (N=26)	.42276	.70909				.823
Item 10 (N=26)	.53920		.68289			.789
Item 11 (N=26)	.66741				.33180	.897
Item 12 (N=26)	.72114					.800
Item 13 (N=26)	.43525	.52641		.36300		.782
Item 14 (N=26)	.73578	-.32739		-.36537		.846
Item 15 (N=26)	.66358				.32038	.754
Item 16 (N=26)	.69644	-.50198				.839
Item 17 (N=25)	.47528			.39094	.51622	.732
Eigen Values	7.7115	2.0463	1.3031	1.2189	1.1261	
Percentage of Variance Explained	45.4	12.0	7.7	7.2	6.6	78.9%

TABLE A3: VARIMAX ROTATED FACTOR MATRICES, FOR ROTTER'S I-E LOCUS OF CONTROL SCALE OVER THE THREE STUDY INTERVALS.

TIME 1: ADMISSION SCALES

Items Included	Factor 1	Factor 2	Factor 3	Factor4	Factor 5	h2
Item 1 (N=56)	.81350					.71502
Item 2 (N=56)	.74936					.64849
Item 3 (N=56)	.66055				.43264	.73510
Item 4 (N=56)		.76135				.65048
Item 5 (N=56)		.71528				.66360
Item 6 (N=56)	.34416	.62821				.60557
Item 7 (N=56)			.83211			.72085
Item 8 (N=56)			.76985			.62350
Item 9 (N=56)			.61145			.51827
Item 10 (N=56)				.81936		.81591
Item 11 (N=56)		.30582		.58402		.45007
Item 12 (N=56)					.68423	.65932
Item 13 (N=56)		.35032		.37099	-.67133	.77086
Eigen Values	3.1907	1.6747	1.4325	1.1744	1.1047	
Percentage of Variance Explained	24.5	12.9	11.0	9.0	8.5	66.9%

TIME 2: TERMINATION SCALES

Items Included	Factor 1	Factor 2	Factor 3	Factor4	Factor 5	h2
Item 1 (N=39)	.78004					.73078
Item 2 (N=39)	.78783					.75797
Item 3 (N=39)	.77715	.35941				.83231
Item 4 (N=38)	.52078	-.34458	.39907	.45430		.77168
Item 5 (N=39)				.89311		.80985
Item 6 (N=39)	.38966	.50554	.48072			.65267
Item 7 (N=39)		.77849				.67017
Item 8 (N=38)		.67051				.46280
Item 9 (N=39)	.32996	.38823			.38560	.50072
Item 10 (N=39)					.90512	.84562
Item 11 (N=38)			.71279		.41059	.76288
Item 12 (N=39)	.41994	.36200		.60926		.70204
Item 13 (N=38)			.85981			.77334
Eigen Values	3.4782	1.8353	1.5510	1.3813	1.0269	
Percentage of Variance Explained	26.8	14.1	11.9	10.6	7.9	71.3%

TIME 3: FOLLOW-UP SCALES

Items Included	Factor 1	Factor 2	Factor 3	Factor4	Factor 5	h2
Item 1 (N=26)	.79093					.69192
Item 2 (N=26)		.88538				.82479
Item 3 (N=26)	.77482			.30273		.72993
Item 4 (N=26)		.57064	.36026	-.41103		.66407
Item 5 (N=26)			.78477			.77374
Item 6 (N=26)					.82939	.77014
Item 7 (N=26)				.88025		.83599
Item 8 (N=26)				.41348	.69912	.75190
Item 9 (N=26)		.83612				.79597
Item 10 (N=26)	.73347					.65925
Item 11 (N=26)	.46156	-.49141				.53342
Item 12 (N=26)	.67921	.40953				.66010
Item 13 (N=26)			.88047			.83938
Eigen Values	3.0289	2.5894	1.4770	1.3531	1.0821	
Percentage of Variance Explained	23.3	19.9	11.4	10.4	8.3	73.3%

TABLE A4: UNROTATED FACTOR MATRICES FOR THE CONFLICT TACTICS SCALE OVER THE THREE STUDY INERVALS

TIME 1: ADMISSION SCALES

Items Included	Factor 1	Factor 2	Factor 3	h2
Item 1 (N=54)	.86707			.78368
Item 2 (N=54)	.86267			.79885
Item 3 (N=54)	.85185			.80540
Item 4 (N=54)	.82718			.69567
Item 5 (N=54)	.77640			.62621
Item 6 (N=54)	.73863			.59226
Item 7 (N=54)	.55354			.37396
Item 8 (N=54)		.75045		.72272
Item 9 (N=54)		.71803	-.55264	.86926
Item 10 (N=54)		.69125	.67485	.93739
Item 11 (N=54)		.53994		.35329
Item 12 (N=54)		.30700		.14414
Eigen Values	4.5270	2.1686	1.0075	
Percentage of Variance Explained	37.7	18.1	8.4	64.2%

TIME 2: TERMINATION SCALES

Items Included	Factor 1	Factor 2	Factor 3	h2
Item 1 (N=36)	.87617			.87791
Item 2 (N=37)	.81724	-.42278		.84128
Item 3 (N=37)	.80951	-.32865		.87098
Item 4 (N=36)	.84105			.82074
Item 5 (N=40)	.87627			.83433
Item 6 (N=38)	.74687			.68949
Item 7 (N=38)	.48405			.43227
Item 8 (N=36)	.59303	.44457		.63641
Item 9 (N=36)	.66993	.49840	-.30239	.72589
Item 10 (N=34)	.48798	.63826		.70869
Item 11 (N=34)		.69422		.67929
Item 12 (N=37)			.54927	.32708
Eigen Values	5.7517	2.1437	1.1792	
Percentage of Variance Explained	47.9	17.9	9.8	75.6%

TIME 3: FOLLOW-UP SCALES

Items Included	Factor 1	Factor 2	Factor 3	h2
Item 1 (N=26)	.86642			.94299
Item 2 (N=26)	.88225			.94966
Item 3 (N=26)	.88865			.87492
Item 4 (N=25)	.80396		.39130	.79001
Item 5 (N=26)	.85118			.75720
Item 6 (N=26)	.84808			.83673
Item 7 (N=25)	.50637		.58772	.64973
Item 8 (N=24)	..71799	.65031		.80205
Item 9 (N=26)	.71094	.38833		.75004
Item 10 (N=24)	.52923	.38833		.55298
Item 11 (N=26)	.67185	.30754		.60773
Item 12 (N=24)		.35858		.35673
Eigen Values	6.6599	1.6802	1.0701	
Percentage of Variance Explained	55.5	14.0	8.9	78.4%

TABLE A5: SOCIAL INDEPENDENCE SCALE ITEMS.

	SCALE ITEM	RANGE
Item 1	Do you meet with your husband/boyfriend.	0-3
Item 2	Who are your presently living with.	0-4
Item 3	Do you see your own friends at this time.	0-1
Item 4	Do you belong to any social organizations in the community.	0-1
Item 5	Do you make most decisions regarding your child/children's welfare.	0-1
Item 6	Do you see your own family.	0-1
Item 7	Do you have the freedom to go out when you feel like it.	0-1
Item 8	Do you go out with or date men other than your husband.	0-1
Item 9	Are you presently seeking employment.	0-1

TABLE A6: FEAR SCALE ITEMS.

	SCALE ITEM	RANGE
Item 1	I worry about my husband finding me.	0-4
Item 2	I find myself looking over my shoulder when I go out.	0-4
Item 3	I worry about my husband/boyfriend gaining entrance to my present living accomodation.	0-4
Item 4	I am afraid to let my children go out alone.	0-4
Item 5	I go out accompanied by someone else.	0-4
Item 6	An unlisted phone number is a good idea.	0-4
Item 7	I make sure the doors are locked where I am living.	0-4
Item 8	I go out during those times that I think my husband will be busy.	0-4
Item 9	It is wise to tell someone where I am going and when I will be back.	0-4
Item 10	I check the streets before I go out.	0-4
Item 11	I am afraid to answer the door.	0-4
Item 12	I worry that my husband/spouse may harm my immediate family.	0-4
Item 13	I go out alone at night.	0-4*
Item 14	It is all right to tell my firends where I am.	0-4*
Item 15	I am afraid of living in the city.	0-4
Item 16	It would be all right to meet my husband/partner in a public place.	0-4*
Item 17	I am not worried about my husband gaining possession of the children by taking them from their school.	0-4*

* Items which were reverse coded.

TABLE A7: CONFLICT TACTICS SCALE ITEMS.

	SCALE ITEM	RANGE
Item 1	He beat you up (did he hit, strangle etc. you more than once).	0-6
Item 2	He kicked, bit or hit with a fist.	0-6
Item 3	He slapped you.	0-6
Item 4	He hit or tried to hit with something.	0-6
Item 5	He pushed, grabbed or shoved you.	0-6
Item 6	He threw something at you.	0-6
Item 7	He threatened you with a knife or gun.	0-6
Item 8	He did or said something to be mean to you.	0-6
Item 9	He insulted or swore at you.	0-6
Item 10	He stomped out of the room or house (or yard).	0-6
Item 11	He sulked and/or refused to talk about it.	0-6
Item 12	He cried.	0-6

TABLE A8: ROTTER'S I-E LOCUS OF CONTROL SCALE ITEMS.

		SCALE ITEMS	RANGE
Item 1	a)	Who gets to be the boss often depends on who was lucky enough to be in the right place first.	
	b)	Getting people to do the right thing depends upon ability, luck has little or nothing to do with it.	0-1
Item 2	a)	Becoming a success is a matter of hard work, luch has little or nothing to do with it.	
	b)	Getting a good job depends mainly on being in the right place at the right time.	0-1
Item 3	a)	In my case getting what I want has little or nothing to do with luck.	
	b)	Many times we might just as well decide what to do by flipping a coin.	0-1
Item 4	a)	When I make plans, I am almost certain that I can make them work.	
	b)	It is not always wise to plan too far ahead because many things turn out to be a matter of good or bad fortune anyhow.	0-1
Item 5	a)	As far as world affairs are concerned, most of us are the victims of forces we can neither understand, nor control.	
	b)	By taking an active part in political and social affairs the people can control world events.	0-1
Item 6	a)	Many times I feel that I have little influence over the things that happen to me.	
	b)	It is impossible for me to believe that chance or luck palys an important role in my life.	0-1
Item 7	a)	It is hard to know whether or not a person really likes you.	
	b)	How many friends you have depends on how nice a person you are.	0-1
Item 8	a)	No matter how hard you try some people just don't like you.	
	b)	People who can't get others to like them don't understand how to get along with others.	0-1
Item 9	a)	Without the right breaks one cannot be an effective leader.	
	b)	Capable people who fail to become leaders have not taken advantage of their opportunities.	0-1
Item 10	a)	Many of the unhappy things in people's lives are partly due to bad luck.	
	b)	People's misfortunes result from the mistakes they make.	0-1
Item 11	a)	Most people don't realize the extent to which their lives are controlled by accidental happenings.	
	b)	There really is no such thing as "luck".	0-1
Item 12	a)	What happens to me is my own doing.	
	b)	Sometimes I feel that I don't have enough control over the direction my life is taking.	0-1
Item 13	a)	People are lonely because they don't try to be friendly.	
	b)	There's not much use in trying too hard to please people, if they like you, they like you.	0-1

TABLE A9: SPLIT-HALF AND STANDARDIZED ITEM ALPHA COEFFICIENTS FOR THE CROSS-SECTIONAL (N=63) AND PANEL (N=30) SAMPLES

1. CROSS-SECTIONAL DESIGN

SCALES	ADMISSION	TERMINATION	FOLLOW-UP
Social Independence Scale (9 items)	Alpha = -.37301	Alpha = -.07175	Alpha = .52052
	Alpha* = -.39935	Alpha* = -.05899	Alpha* = .45946
Fear Scale (17 items)	Alpha = .88640	Alpha = .87365	Alpha = .92859
	Alpha* = .89024	Alpha* = .74937	Alpha* = .92962
Rotter's I-E Locus of Control Scale (13 items)	Alpha = .71096	Alpha = .72538	Alpha = .56921
	Alpha* = .70862	Alpha* = .74937	Alpha* = .61728
Conflict Tactics Scale (12 items)	Alpha = .82652	Alpha = .88934	Alpha = .92736
	Alpha* = .82209	Alpha* = .88883	Alpha* = .92492

2. PANEL DESIGN

SCALES	ADMISSION	TERMINATION	FOLLOW-UP
Social Independence Scale (9 items)	Alpha = -.67136	Alpha = -.20741	Alpha = .56781
	Alpha* = -.86774	Alpha* = -.20879	Alpha* = .53828
Fear Scale (17 items)	Alpha = .89318	Alpha = .89903	Alpha = .93163
	Alpha* = .89687	Alpha* = .89875	Alpha* = .93239
Rotter's I-E Locus of Control Scale (13 items)	Alpha = .66431	Alpha = .81550	Alpha = .58835
	Alpha* = .68485	Alpha* = .83669	Alpha* = .63330
Conflict Tactics Scale (12 items)	Alpha = .85545	Alpha = .91516	Alpha = .93185
	Alpha* = .85339	Alpha* = .91255	Alpha* = .92912

TABLE A10: T-TEST FOR THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE SCALE MEANS
BY STUDY INTERVAL AND SAMPLE DESIGN

1. CROSS-SECTIONAL DESIGN

Scale Type Brokendown By Study Interval	X	S.D.	S.E.	Δ	t	df	p.
Social Independence Scale							
Time 1	.4920	.121	.020				
to				-.1009	-4.58	28	0.00
Time 2	.5928	.136	.022				
Time 2	.6420	.141	.030				
to				-.0129	-0.48	21	-0.64
Time 3	.6549	.199	.042				
Time 1	.4971	.122	.025				
to				-.1623	-4.37	23	0.00
Time 3	.6594	.191	.039				
Fear Scale							
Time 1	2.4938	.733	.119				
to				.4598	4.98	37	0.00
Time 2	2.0341	.719	.117				
Time 2	1.9011	.773	.165				
to				.0792	0.64	21	0.53
Time 3	1.8219	.929	.198				
Time 1	2.3603	.744	.152				
to				.5064	3.03	23	0.01
Time 3	1.8539	.871	.178				
Rotter's I-E Locus of Control Scale							
Time 1	.3468	.204	.034				
to				.0386	1.56	36	0.13
Time 2	.3082	.210	.034				
Time 2	.2980	.233	.050				
to				.0078	0.20	21	0.85
Time 3	.2902	.166	.035				
Time 1	.4193	.197	.041				
to				.1183	3.68	22	0.00
Time 3	.3010	.167	.035				
Conflict Tactics Scale							
Time 1	3.2693	1.12	.184				
to				.2178	0.93	36	0.36
Time 2	3.1446	1.48	.243				
Time 2	3.1598	1.57	.343				
to				.1329	0.62	20	0.54
Time 3	3.0269	1.51	.330				
Time 1	3.2844	1.24	.253				
to				.4345	1.44	23	0.16
Time 3	2.8499	1.65	.337				

* df = N - 1

2. PANEL DESIGN

Scale Type Brokendown By Study Interval	X	S.D.	S.E.	Δ	t	df	p.
Social Independence Scale							
Time 1	.4933	.125	.023				
to				-.1130	-4.74	28	0.00
Time 2	.6063	.125	.025				
Time 2	.6420	.141	.030				
to				-.0129	0.77	21	-0.64
Time 3	.6549	.199	.042				
Time 1	.4971	.122	.025				
to				-.1623	-4.37	23	0.00
Time 3	.6594	.191	.039				
Fear Scale							
Time 1	2.4604	.745	.119				
to				.4604	3.95	28	0.00
Time 2	2.0000	.722	.117				
Time 2	1.9011	.773	.165				
to				.0792	0.64	21	0.53
Time 3	1.8219	.929	.198				
Time 1	2.3603	.744	.152				
to				.5064	3.03	23	0.01
Time 3	1.8539	.871	.178				
Rotter's I-E Locus of Control Scale							
Time 1	.3566	.211	.040				
to				.0593	2.20	27	0.04
Time 2	.2973	.220	.042				
Time 2	.2980	.283	.050				
to				.0078	0.20	21	0.85
Time 3	.2902	.166	.035				
Time 1	.4193	.197	.041				
to				.1183	3.68	22	0.00
Time 3	.3010	.167	.035				
Conflict Tactics Scale							
Time 1	3.2944	1.19	.224				
to				.2178	0.93	27	0.36
Time 2	3.0766	1.51	.286				
Time 2	3.1598	1.57	.343				
to				.1329	0.62	20	0.54
Time 3	3.9269	1.51	.330				
Time 1	3.2844	1.24	.253				
to				.4345	1.44	23	0.16
Time 3	2.8499	1.65	.337				

* df = N - 1

TABLE A11: TEST-RETEST RELIABILITY AS INDICATED BY THE PEARSONS CORRELATION COEEFFICIENTS BROKENDOWN BY STUDY INTERVAL AND SAMPLE DESIGN

1. CROSS-SECTIONAL DESIGN

Social Independence Scale

	Admission	Termination	Follow-up
Admission	1.0000 N=63 p.=0.0000		
Termination	.4480 N=38 p.=0.0050	1.0000 N=63 p.=0.0000	
Follow-up	.3903 N=24 p.=0.0620	.7724 N=22 p.=0.0000	1.0000 N=63 p.=0.0000

Fear Scale

	Admission	Termination	Follow-up
Admission	1.0000 N=63 p.=0.0000		
Termination	.6933 N=38 p.=0.0000	1.0000 N=63 p.=0.0000	
Follow-up	.4949 N=24 p.=0.0150	.7826 N=22 p.=0.0000	1.0000 N=63 p.=0.0000

Rotter's I-E Locus of Control Scale

	Admission	Termination	Follow-up
Admission	1.0000 N=63 p.=0.0000		
Termination	.7365 N=37 p.=0.0000	1.0000 N=63 p.=0.0000	
Follow-up	.6521 N=23 p.=0.0010	.6211 N=22 p.=0.0002	1.0000 N=63 p.=0.0000

Conflict Tactics Scale

	Admission	Termination	Follow-up
Admission	1.0000 N=63 p.=0.0000		
Termination	.6244 N=37 p.=0.0000	1.0000 N=63 p.=0.0000	
Follow-up	.5063 N=24 p.=0.0120	.8006 N=21 p.=0.0000	1.0000 N=63 p.=0.0000

2. PANEL DESIGN

Social Independence Scale

	Admission	Termination	Follow-up
Admission	1.0000 N=30 p.=0.0000		
Termination	.4480 N=29 p.=0.0060	1.0000 N=30 p.=0.0000	
Follow-up	.3903 N=24 p.=0.0620	.7724 N=22 p.=0.0000	1.0000 N=30 p.=0.0000

Fear Scale

	Admission	Termination	Follow-up
Admission	1.0000 N=30 p.=0.0000		
Termination	.6347 N=29 p.=0.0000	1.0000 N=30 p.=0.0000	
Follow-up	.4949 N=24 p.=0.0150	.7826 N=22 p.=0.0000	1.0000 N=30 p.=0.0000

Rotter's I-E Locus of Control Scale

	Admission	Termination	Follow-up
Admission	1.0000 N=30 p.=0.0000		
Termination	.7810 N=28 p.=0.0000	1.0000 N=30 p.=0.0000	
Follow-up	.6521 N=23 p.=0.0010	.6211 N=22 p.=0.0020	1.0000 N=30 p.=0.0000

Conflict Tactics Scale

	Admission	Termination	Follow-up
Admission	1.0000 N=30 p.=0.0000		
Termination	.5987 N=28 p.=0.0010	1.0000 N=30 p.=0.0000	
Follow-up	.5063 N=24 p.=0.0120	.8006 N=21 p.=0.0000	1.0000 N=30 p.=0.0000